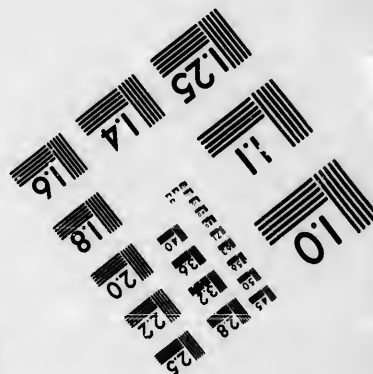
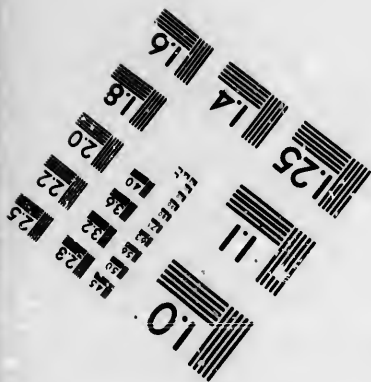
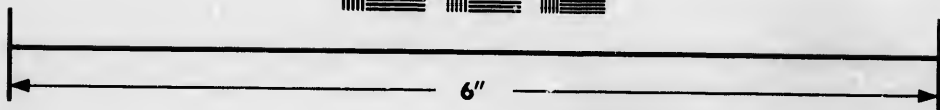
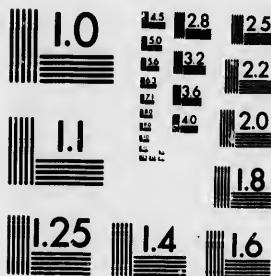


**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH  
Microfiche  
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH  
Collection de  
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

**© 1986**

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- Coloured covers/  
Couverture de couleur
- Covers damaged/  
Couverture endommagée
- Covers restored and/or laminated/  
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée
- Cover title missing/  
Le titre de couverture manque
- Coloured maps/  
Cartes géographiques en couleur
- Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/  
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)
- Coloured plates and/or illustrations/  
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur
- Bound with other material/  
Relié avec d'autres documents
- Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/  
La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distorsion le long de la marge intérieure
- Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/  
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.
- Additional comments:  
Commentaires supplémentaires:

- Coloured pages/  
Pages de couleur
- Pages damaged/  
Pages endommagées
- Pages restored and/or laminated/  
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées
- Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/  
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées
- Pages detached/  
Pages détachées
- Showthrough/  
Transparence
- Quality of print varies/  
Qualité inégale de l'impression
- Includes supplementary material/  
Comprend du matériel supplémentaire
- Only edition available/  
Seule édition disponible
- Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/  
Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/  
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	12X	14X	16X	18X	20X	22X	24X	26X	28X	30X	32X
					✓						

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

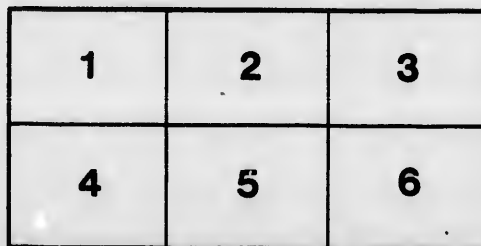
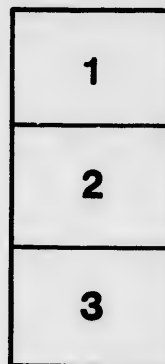
New Brunswick Museum  
Saint John

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol  $\rightarrow$  (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol  $\nabla$  (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

New Brunswick Museum  
Saint John

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole  $\rightarrow$  signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole  $\nabla$  signifie "FIN".

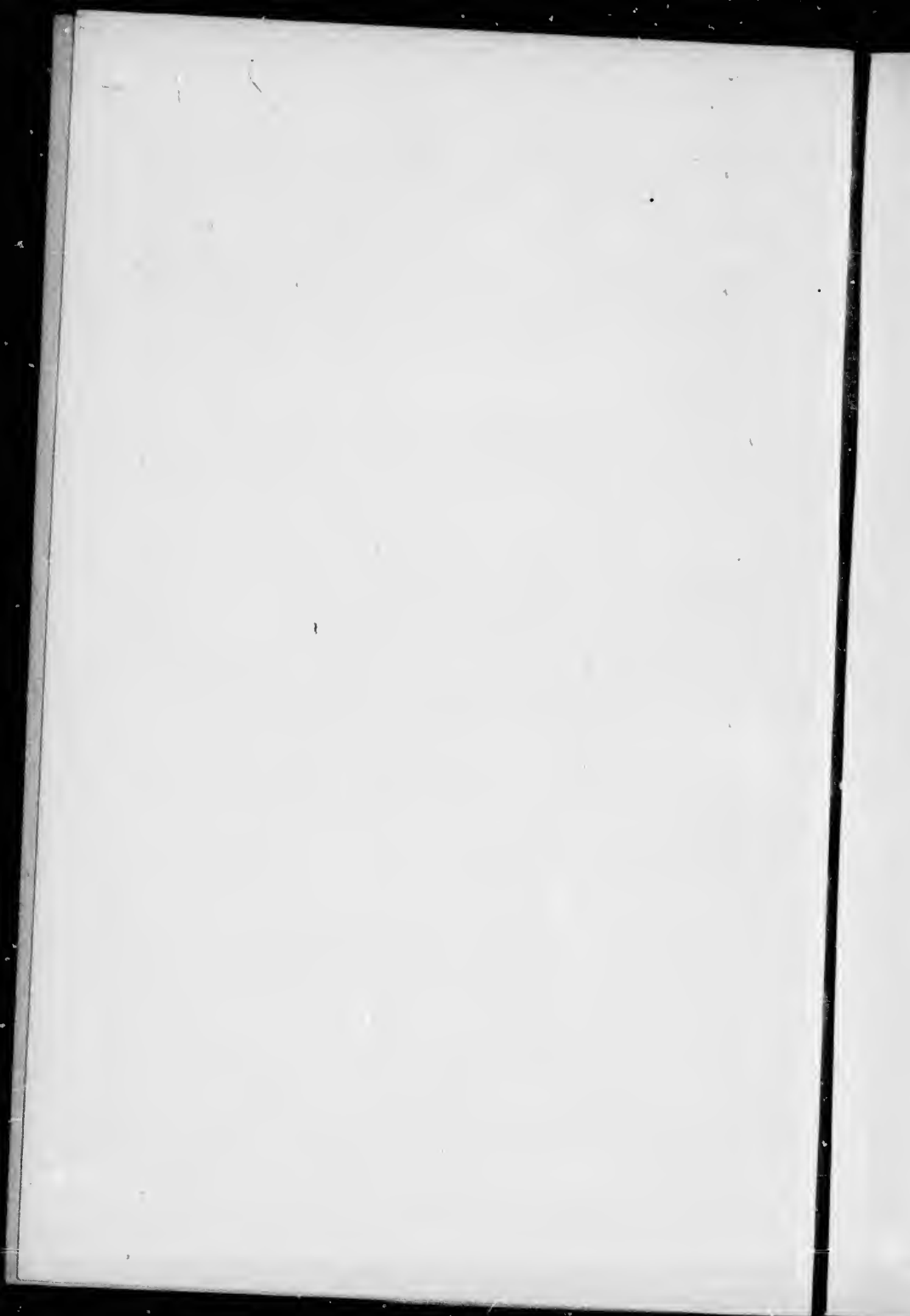
Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

errata  
to

pelure,  
on à



32X



**THE BORDER WARS**  
**OF**  
**NEW ENGLAND**

**BOOKS BY SAMUEL ADAMS DRAKE**

Each 1 vol. 12mo.

With Maps and Illustrations. \$1.50.

---

**THE BORDER WARS OF NEW ENGLAND.**

**THE MAKING OF THE OHIO VALLEY STATES,  
1640-1837.**

**THE MAKING OF VIRGINIA AND THE MIDDLE  
COLONIES, 1578-1701.**

**THE MAKING OF NEW ENGLAND, 1580-1643.**

**THE MAKING OF THE GREAT WEST, 1512-1853.**







SIR WILLIAM PHIPS ATTACKING QUEBEC.

THE BORDER WARS  
OF  
NEW ENGLAND

COMMONLY CALLED KING WILLIAM'S AND  
QUEEN ANNE'S WARS

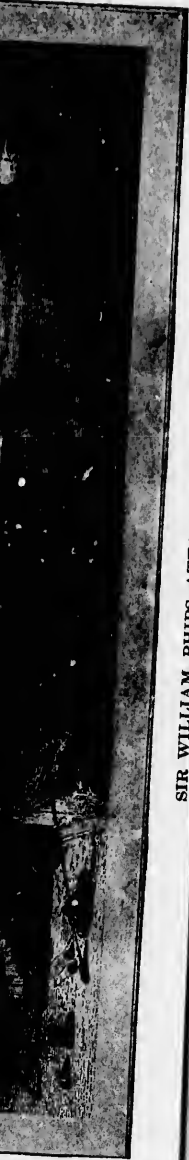
BY  
SAMUEL ADAMS DRAKE

"Honor's a good brooch to wear in a man's hat, at all times."—B. JONSON

WITH MANY ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAPS

NEW YORK  
CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS  
1897

SIR WILLIAM Phips ATTACKING QUEBEC





SIR WILLIAM PHIPS ATTACKING COPENHAGEN

THE BORDER WARS  
OF  
NEW ENGLAND

COMMONLY CALLED KING WILLIAM'S AND  
QUEEN ANNE'S WARS

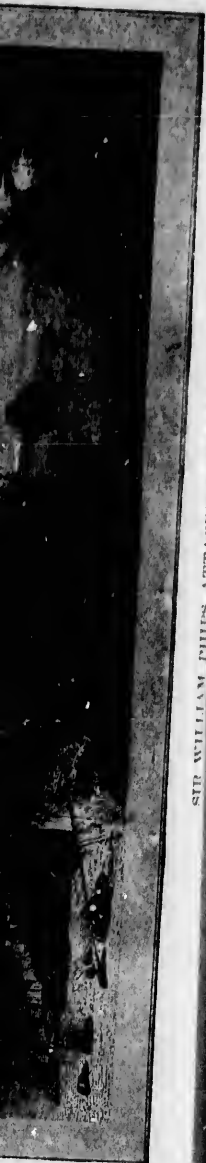
BY  
SAMUEL ADAMS DRAKE

"Honor's a good brooch to wear in a man's hat, at all times."—B. JONSON

*WITH MANY ILLUSTRATIONS AND MAPS*

NEW YORK  
CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS  
1897

STEPHEN WILLIAM PHILIP ATTACKING THE FORTRESS



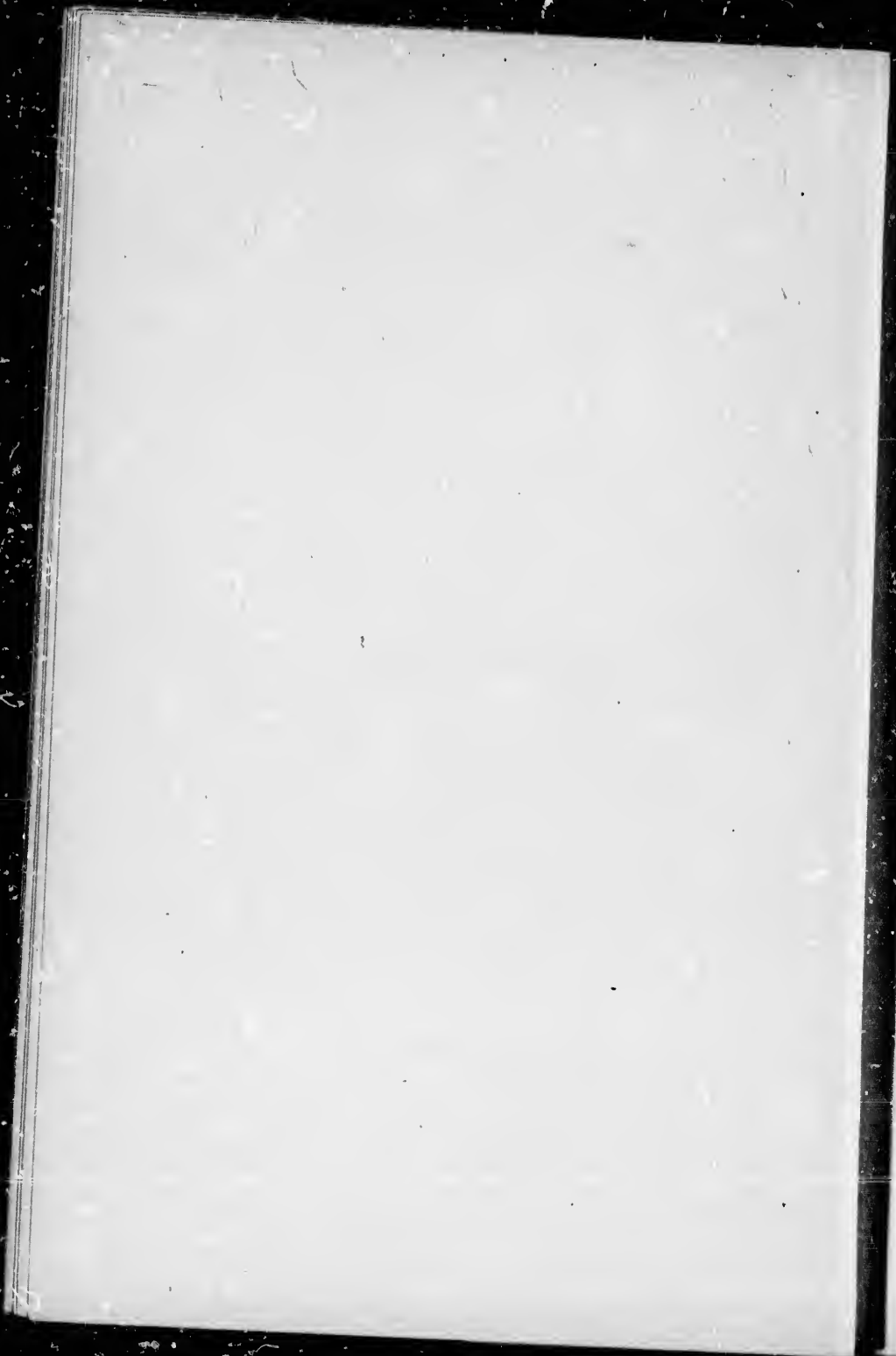
AMERICAN STATE  
LIBRARY

COPYRIGHT, 1897, BY  
CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS

TROW DIRECTORY  
PRINTING AND BOOKBINDING COMPANY  
NEW YORK

To

LUCIUS TUTTLE, Esq.



UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO  
LIBRARY

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	1
<b>King William's War</b>	
CHAP.	
I. HOSTILITIES BEGIN . . . . . 1688-1689.	9
II. THE SACK OF DOVER . . . . . June 27, 1689.	14
III. THE CAPTIVITY OF SARAH GERRISH . . . . .	23
IV. PEMAQUID TAKEN; WITH THE RELATION OF JOHN GYLES . . . . . August, 1689.	27
V. CHURCH'S FIRST EXPEDITION . . . . . September, 1689.	36
VI. FRONTENAC'S WINTER RAIDS . . . . . March, 1690.	43
VII. PHIPS TAKES PORT ROYAL, BUT FAILS AT QUEBEC . . . . . May-October, 1690.	55
VIII. CHURCH'S SECOND EXPEDITION . . . . . September, 1690-1691.	66
IX. YORK LAID WASTE, WELLS ATTACKED . . . . . February-June, 1692.	73
X. REBUILDING OF PEMAQUID TO TREATY OF 1693 . . . . . May, 1692-August, 1693.	82
XI. DURHAM DESTROYED . . . . . July 18, 1694.	94
XII. A YEAR OF DISASTERS . . . . . 1694-1696.	104



CONTENTS

CHAP.	PAGE
XIII. ONSLAUGHT AT HAVERHILL March 15, 1697.	117
XIV. TO THE PEACE OF RYSWICK	129
<b>Queen Anne's War</b>	
XV. THE NEW OUTLOOK 1702-1703.	141
XVI. SIX TERRIBLE DAYS August, 1703.	153
XVII. THE WAR GROWS IN SAVAGERY 1703.	162
XVIII. THE SACKING OF DEERFIELD February 28, 1704.	172
XIX. THE ENEMY CUTS OFF BOTH ENDS OF THE LINE 1704.	187
XX. CHURCH'S LAST EXPEDITION May, 1704.	193
XXI. NEGOTIATIONS FOR NEUTRALITY July, 1704-April, 1706.	205
XXII. HOSTILITIES RESUMED. April, 1706-Oct., 1706.	216
XXIII. FUTILE SIEGE OF PORT ROYAL May, 1707.	224
XXIV. HAVERHILL SACKED August 29, 1708.	238
XXV. INVASION OF CANADA FAILS; PORT ROYAL TAKEN April, 1709-October, 1710.	250
XXVI. MORE INDIAN DEPREDATIONS June, 1710-April, 1711.	263
XXVII. THE GREAT SHIPWRECK August 22, 1711.	267
XXVIII. CONCLUSION	284

## ILLUSTRATIONS

SIR WILLIAM PHIPS ATTACKING QUEBEC . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
KING WILLIAM III. . . . .	PAGE 1
QUEEN MARY . . . . .	4
COTTON MATHER . . . . .	9
SIR EDMUND ANDROS . . . . .	12
FORT AND APPROACHES, PEMAQUID, ME. . . . .	29
COLONEL BENJAMIN CHURCH . . . . .	37
PLAN OF FALMOUTH NECK, PORTLAND . . . . .	40
SAMUEL SEWALL . . . . .	45
LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR STOUGHTON . . . . .	46
CANADIAN SNOWSHOE RANGER . . . . .	47
WENTWORTH GARRISON, SALMON FALLS, N. H. . . . .	49
PHIPS RAISING THE SUNKEN TREASURE . . . . .	56
SKETCH MAP, APPROACHES TO QUEBEC . . . . .	59
QUEBEC, FROM AN OLD PRINT . . . . .	61
SITE OF STORER GARRISON, WELLS, ME. . . . .	71
JUNKINS GARRISON, YORK, ME. . . . .	75
JOHN NELSON . . . . .	89
THE BASTILE, IN THE TIME OF LOUIS XIV. . . . .	91
WOODMAN GARRISON, DURHAM, N. H. . . . .	97
RUINS OF WOODMAN GARRISON . . . . .	101
INDIAN HEAD BREAKER . . . . .	107

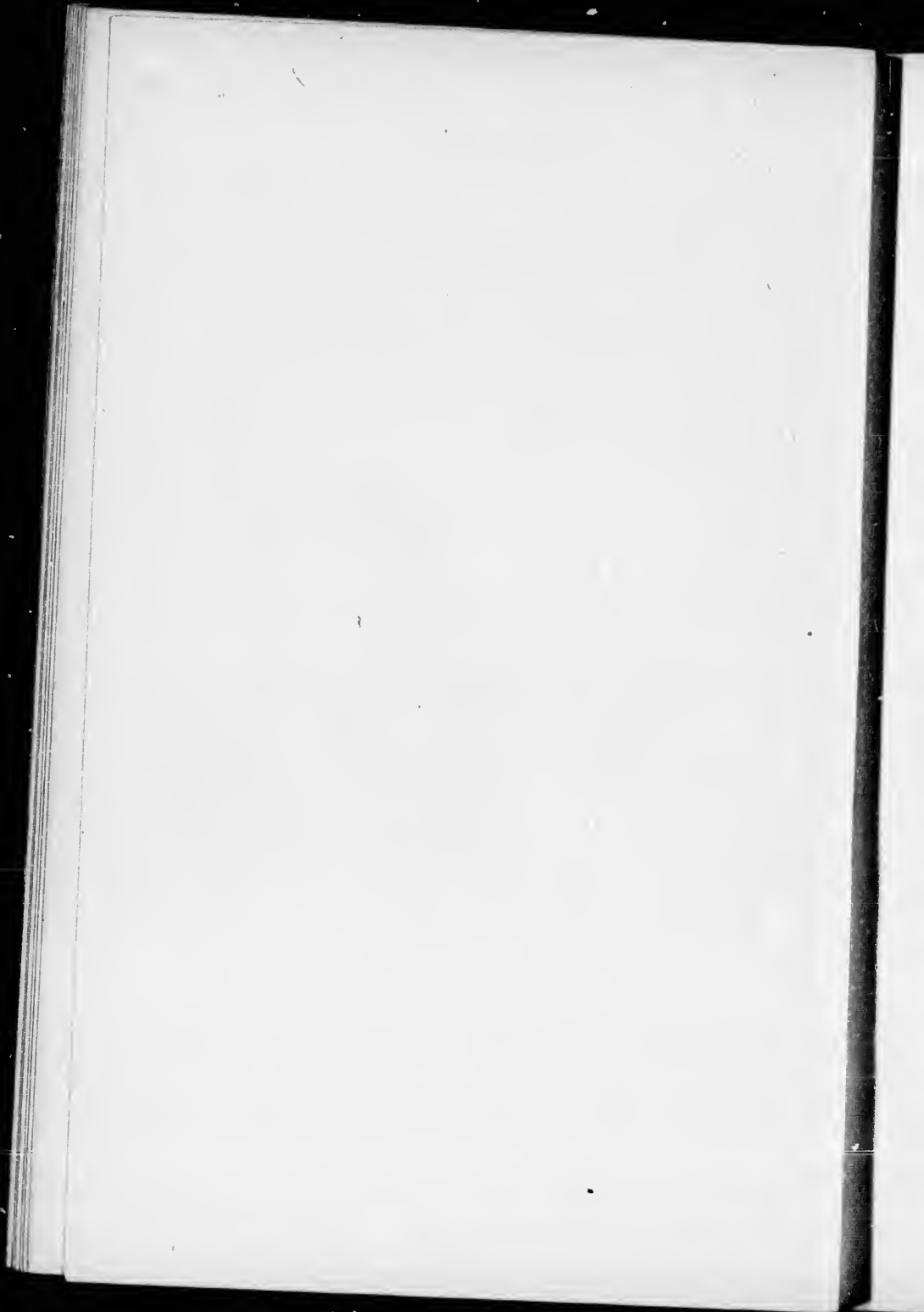
	PAGE
IN THE BAY OF FUNDY . . . . .	110
DUSTAN MONUMENT, BOSCAWEN, N. H. . . . .	121
HANNAH DUSTAN SLAYS HER CAPTORS : . . . .	125
DUSTAN TANKARD . . . . .	127
DOG MAIL-CARRIER . . . . .	132
SCAMMAN'S JUG . . . . .	133
BRADSTREET HOUSE, NORTH ANDOVER, MASS. . . . .	135
QUEEN ANNE . . . . .	142
LOUIS XIV. . . . .	145
GOVERNOR SIMON BRADSTREET . . . . .	146
THE EARL OF BELMONT . . . . .	147
GOVERNOR JOSEPH DUDLEY . . . . .	149
ANCIENT FERRY-WAY, KENNEBUNK RIVER, ME. . . . .	155
SCENE OF HARDING'S EXPLOIT . . . . .	157
ANCIENT SEAT OF THE PIGWACKETTS, FRYEBURG, ME. . . . .	163
DOOR OF SHELDON HOUSE, WITH MARKS OF AXES . . . . .	179
ENSIGN SHELDON'S HOUSE, DEERFIELD, MASS. . . . .	181
GLIMPSE OF LAKE WINNIPESAUKEE . . . . .	188
CHURCH'S SWORD . . . . .	193
ANCIENT CHART OF PENOBSCOT BAY . . . . .	195
ENTRANCE TO MOUNT DESERT HARBOR . . . . .	197
AT MOUNT DESERT ISLAND . . . . .	198
RUINS OF CHURCH'S HOUSE . . . . .	203
ANCIENT GARRISON, DRACUT, MASS . . . . .	217
COLONEL FRANCIS WAINWRIGHT'S HOUSE, IPSWICH, MASS. . . . .	227
PLAN OF PORT ROYAL, NOVA SCOTIA . . . . .	231
SITE OF WAINWRIGHT GARRISON, HAVERHILL, MASS. . . . .	242
PEASLEE GARRISON, HAVERHILL, MASS. . . . .	245

ILLUSTRATIONS

xiii<sup>11</sup>

PAGE  
 . 110  
 . 121  
 . 125  
 . 127  
 . 132  
 . 133  
 . 135  
 . 142  
 . 145  
 . 146  
 . 147  
 . 149  
 . 155  
 . 157  
 . 163  
 . 179  
 . 181  
 . 188  
 . 193  
 . 195  
 . 197  
 . 198  
 . 203  
 . 217  
 . 227  
 . 231  
 . 242  
 . 245

PAGE  
 TEE YEE NEEN HO GA RON, EMPEROR OF THE SIX NATIONS. 252  
 SA GA YEATH QUA PIETH TON, KING OF THE MAGUAS . . 253  
 ECON OH KOAN, KING OF THE RIVER NATION . . . . . 254  
 HO NEE YEATH TAN NO RON . . . . . 255  
 MAP, PLACE OF THE WRECK . . . . . 278  
 SCHUYLER AND THE INDIAN SCOUTS . . . . . 280  
 A WAMPUM PEACE BELT . . . . . 291  
 TREATY SYMBOLS . . . . . 292



## INTRODUCTION

A MONOGRAPH on the subject of the Indian wars during the reigns of King William III. and Queen Anne was a favorite project with my father, Samuel G. Drake, for which he gathered a mass of materials in manuscript, but did not live to see realized. With the aid of these, and other contemporary accounts, the present volume has been written.

Although told more or less fully in all the general histories, the story is nowhere connectedly told, but is broken off whenever other features of the general subject demand a hearing. This method not only breaks the thread, but also the force of the story, which is much more satisfactorily followed in a compact form.

A twenty years' war, practically continuous, would certainly constitute a critical period in the history of any people, but to one only just beginning to take firm



KING WILLIAM III.

root in the soil, and to stretch out a few feeble branches into the wilderness, it was really a question of life or death. It was the strategy of the enraged enemy to lop off these branches and thus prevent the growth of, if not finally kill, the tree itself.

At the breaking out of these wars, the New England frontier practically extended from the Hudson to the Penobscot, or from Albany to Pemaquid; and while the rivers flowing southward to the sea, through the English settlements, were always so many avenues of danger to be watched, this whole extent of country was open to an enemy who needed nothing but the sun, moon, or stars to guide him. To guard this long frontier was impossible. To block up the mouths of the rivers with forts, isolated from all support, was equally idle, as was proved by the utter failure of every such attempt. Herein lay the weakness of the English. They were compelled to receive the enemy at their own doors, and that disadvantage they labored under from first to last.

As the English inhabited open villages, only one practicable plan of defence suggested itself. This was to make certain houses, better adapted or more favorably situated for the purpose than others, so many rallying points for all the rest, thus turning mere dwellings into what were called garrisons. Exquisitely homely as these ancient structures seem to-day, nothing could more forcibly press home the startling fact that in them the sole dependence of a settlement often lay, or in what a decisive sense every man's house was his castle. Realizing the uncertain tenure of these historic buildings, threatened as they are on every hand, I have reproduced as many of them as possible in these pages, believing too that, like the famous standard of Joan of Arc, as they

le branches  
n of life or  
nemy to lop  
th of, if not

w England  
lson to the  
d while the  
h the Eng-  
s of danger  
was open to  
n, moon, or  
ontier was  
rivers with  
dle, as was  
npt. Here-  
were com-  
s, and that  
o last.

only one  
This was  
more favor-  
many rally-  
dwellings  
homely as  
ould more  
them the  
in what a  
le. Real-  
buildings,  
eproduced  
believing  
c, as they

had been through the ordeal, so with good reason they should share in the honor.

The earliest Indian names, as preserved by old writers, like Champlain, Lescarbot, and others, may with propriety be dispensed with, as having been given without adequate knowledge in the first place, and dropped as soon as a more thorough knowledge of the subject was obtained. For the sake of convenience, the English fell into the custom of calling the various tribes by the names of the rivers they lived upon, as the Kennebec, Penobscot, and St. John Indians, etc., but the French, with more accuracy, designated the three principal Abenaki Nations as Canibas, Malicites, and Micmacs, each speaking a different dialect. According to this classification, the Canibas occupied the Kennebec and its tributaries, the Malicites all between the Penobscot and St. John, the Micmacs, generally speaking, all now comprised in the provinces of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick. Besides these, the once numerous Sokokis, of the river Saco, dwindled to a handful, had mostly joined other tribes, and the Pennacooks, of the Merrimac, were no longer either very numerous or united, though still sufficiently formidable to be troublesome neighbors. Their villages were to be found in the neighborhood of the Amoskeag Falls, now Manchester, and at various points above, while the peaceful section, or Praying Indians, as they were called, lived at Pawtucket Falls, now Lowell, on a tract of land reserved to their use by the efforts of the Apostle Eliot in 1653. Although these people were friendly to the whites, there was much the same sort of intimacy between them and their pagan relations as between the seceding Mohawks and their friends, a fact sure to cast more or less sus-



picion upon their fidelity in time of war. In the Connecticut Valley the Indians had been, for the most part, dispersed during Philip's War, the fragments going to other and safer localities. The upper valley of this river seems to have been reserved as a hunting ground, or as a debatable ground, roamed over by different and hostile tribes from time to time.



QUEEN MARY.

Back of all these, in the heart of the White Mountains, lay what was, perhaps, the oldest village of the Soko-

kis, near what is now Fryeburg, Me. This village was Pigwacket, or Pequawket, long a thorn in the side of the English from its almost inaccessible position, which made it practically secure from attack, while the waters flowing out of the mountains here led directly to the Maine coast on one side, or to the New Hampshire coast on the other.

For war purposes the rivers were connected by cross-paths, easily traversed by the runners who carried the war token from village to village.

And what of the Indian himself? What shall be said of him? Undoubtedly there is much to admire, more to arouse our pity. We cannot but feel that he was the innocent victim of a cruel destiny. We know that he was un-

In the Con-  
the most part,  
l during Phil-  
the fragments  
other and  
calities. The  
alley of this riv-  
to have been  
as a hunting  
r as a debata-  
and, roamed  
different and  
bes from time

f all these, in  
of the White  
s, lay what  
aps, the old-  
of the Soko-  
s village was  
a the side of  
sition, which  
le the waters  
rectly to the  
pshire coast

ed by cross-  
carried the

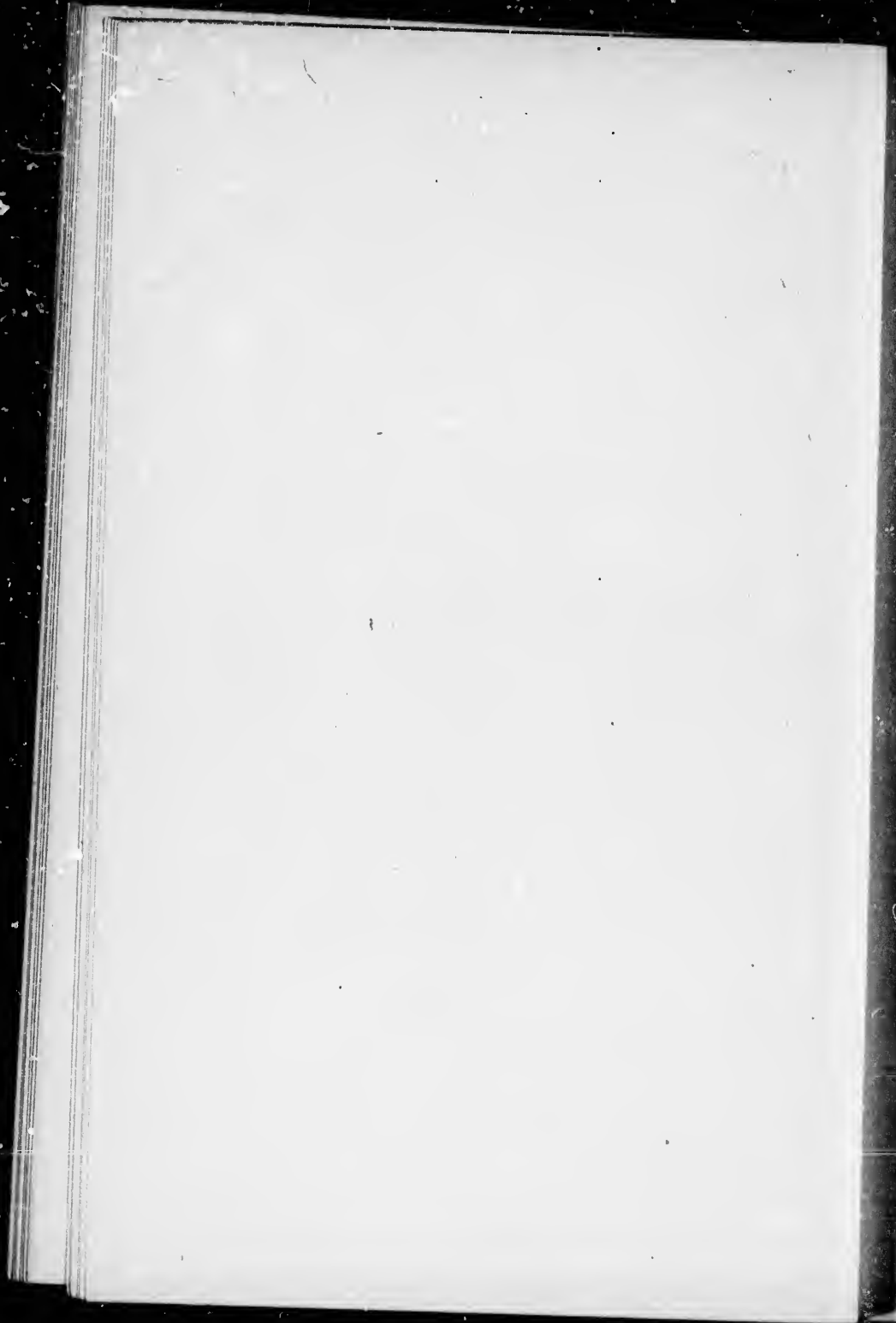
shall be said  
uire, more to  
e was the in-  
at he was un-

justly dealt with. We admit that he fought for his rights as he knew them, and in treating of the question, from a moral stand-point, we are invariably driven to take the defensive. All we know is that the white man was the willing instrument, perhaps the appointed instrument, of the red man's extinction. If the decrees of an inexorable destiny are to be deplored, the world has been going wrong ever since the Creation. History is full of just such examples.

But at the moment when we are ready to admire the red man's noble traits, his ferocious cruelty, that rage of blood which delights in rending and tearing its helpless victims, disenchants us. We note how he measured success in war by the amount of havoc and misery he was able to inflict, and turn away from him in horror and disgust. With the tormented English borderers, self-preservation was the higher law. The final appeal must therefore be to a Higher Court than ours.



**KING WILLIAM'S WAR**



t  
l  
s  
l  
t  
c  
l  
n  
s  
i  
w  
t

# I

## HOSTILITIES BEGIN

1688-1689

**T**HE renewal of hostilities with the Abenakis, after ten years of peace, was distinctly the result of English aggressions. At the bottom lay the one irritating cause of all the Indian wars from that day to this, never to be removed except by the final subjugation of one or the other race. By the rapid growth and steady extension of English settlements, peace was working the downfall of the natives even more certainly than war, for just as the wild grasses are eradicated by the cultivated sorts, so slowly but surely, step by step, the red man was being thrust back into the wilderness. Under such conditions little provocation was needed to fan the smouldering embers into a flame; and the whole series of outbreaks, in their primary cause, may therefore be regarded as one.

First cause of war.



COTTON MATHER.

The Ten Years' War, or Lamentable Decade, as Cotton

Mather tearfully terms it, is commonly known as King William's War, although it began some time before William ascended the throne. But the momentous events, arising from the revolution in England, merged what was at first merely a local struggle into the larger proportions of a national conflict, as France and England soon went to war about the succession to the throne; and, willing or unwilling, the colonies found themselves drawn into it.

For New England no time could have been worse chosen for an outbreak. It came just after the people were arbitrarily deprived of self-government, and put under the rule of a royal governor, whom they soon heartily detested. This was Sir Edmund Andros, a favorite of James II. when Duke of York, and his governor of New York after its recovery from the Dutch. Governor Andros unpopular. With the mass of the people whom he was now sent to govern Andros had nothing whatever in common. He was a thick-and-thin royalist, and they considered James II. a despot. In his eyes they were little better than rebels and traitors; in theirs, he was the ready tool of a tyrant. The people were therefore disconcerted, angry, and stubborn—by no means the best frame of mind for facing a great public danger.

Andros was, however, ready enough to assert the rights of his master, and the disputed Acadian boundary gave him an opportunity not to be neglected. In the spring of 1688 he sailed to various points of the Maine coast, as far as St. Castin's trading-post, at Penobscot, still Descent on St. Castin. known by his name. Sir Edmund purposed holding the place permanently, but the ruinous state of the old French fort there induced him to change his mind. Before leaving, however, he plun-

own as King  
time before  
momentous  
and, merged  
o the larger  
and England  
the throne;  
l themselves

been worse  
the people  
and put un-  
oon heartily  
favorite of  
rnor of New  
the Dutch.  
om he was  
ver in com-  
d they con-  
y were little  
he was the  
erefore dis-  
ns the best  
er.

t the rights  
ndary gave  
the spring  
aine coast,  
obscot, still  
d purposed  
y, but the  
duced him  
er, he plun-

dered St. Castin's house, respecting only the altar and vessels of the Catholic mission. The baseness of the act, so like to that of some roving buccaneer, aroused the indignation of St. Castin's tribesmen, the Penobscots, over whom he had unlimited control, and they were now ready to dig up the hatchet whenever he should give the signal.

Another, and even less justifiable, exploit soon followed. This was the seizure of sixteen Indians at Saco, by Benjamin Blackman, a justice of the peace, in retaliation for the killing of some cattle at North Yarmouth. It is said that Blackman purposed selling these Indians into slavery. Be that as it may, the act set all the tribes buzzing with excitement. Reprisals quickly followed. Immediately the Kennebec Indians made a descent upon New Dartmouth (Newcastle), taking Henry Smith, Edward Taylor, and Indians seized at Saco. their families, prisoners, and carrying them off to Teconnet. Egeremet, the chief sagamore, angrily told Smith that these things were done in return for the outrages committed at Penobscot and Saco; significantly adding that St. Castin had promised the Indians all the powder and ball they might want to fight the English with.<sup>1</sup>

At the same time a Jesuit missionary arrived from Canada, bringing a present of powder and guns, and furthermore announcing that two hundred Frenchmen would shortly follow him.<sup>2</sup>

With the passions of the Indians inflamed against the English to a pitch of fury, it is not strange that some of the prisoners suffered death at the hands of their captors. And thus matters stood in the autumn of 1688.

<sup>1</sup> SMITH'S Relation to the Commissioners of the United Colonies, September 14, 1689.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*



Fearing that he would soon have an Indian war on his hands, Sir Edmund first tried diplomacy. He immediately ordered all the Indian prisoners set at liberty, and called upon the savages to do the same by the English captives, and also to give up the murderers of any English without delay. These demands being treated with silent contempt, Sir Edmund found himself obliged to use force or confess defeat, with the result that his inefficiency proved as deplorable in war as in diplomacy.



SIR EDMUND ANDROS.

Seven hundred men were hastily levied, and with Andros at their head, marched down through the eastern country, in the beginning of November. They found not one solitary Indian to fight, suffered incredible hardships, and loudly complained of being thus led about the country through frost and snow on a fool's errand. All the good that Andros really did, in this worse than foolish expedition, was to leave garrisons in the various frontier posts of Maine.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> He established a new post as a check to the Kennebec tribes, thus referred to in a letter from Wait Winthrop to his brother: "They have built something up Kennebec River which is called Fort Ann, where Captain Savage is with his Company." December 25, 1688. In December the governor was frozen up in the Kennebec.

Indian war on  
 cy. He im-  
 y ordered all  
 an prisoners  
 berty, and  
 on the sav-  
 lo the same  
 English cap-  
 also to give  
 murderers of  
 ish without  
 esedemands  
 ted with si-  
 mpt, Sir Ed-  
 and himself  
 o use force  
 defeat, with  
 that his in-  
 proved as  
 in war as  
 cy.

d with An-  
 he eastern  
 hey found  
 incredible  
 d of being  
 ough frost  
 at Andros  
 on, was to  
 Maine.<sup>1</sup>

s referred to in  
 ething up Ken-  
 his Company."  
 Kennebec.

Spring came, and with it news of the revolution in England. The arrest and imprisonment of Sir Edmund, at Boston, quickly followed. Being now without any lawful government, Massachusetts reassumed her old form, until such time as further orders could be received from England, and as the public exigency now demanded. Confusion in the administra- Andros deposed, April, 1689. tion of military, as well as civil, affairs necessarily accompanied these abrupt and bewildering changes. The garrisons posted along the Maine border took sides in the dispute. Many of the soldiers deserted, some were drawn off, and the rest with difficulty kept at their posts of duty.

Some effort was made by the new government to prevent further hostilities with the Indians, but the storm had been long brewing and was ready to burst at last; and when it did, all the old animosities were dragged forth to add to its fury tenfold.

## II

### THE SACK OF DOVER

June 27, 1689

DOVER is one of the oldest settlements in New Hampshire. By the year 1689 it had grown to be one of the most flourishing. There were, in fact, two settlements, a second having grown up at the first falls of the Cocheco

**Cocheco Falls.** River, just as, in the course of time, lumber was found to be the true source of wealth of the province. At these falls Richard Waldron had built a saw and grist mill. The forests stood at his door. The river very obligingly turned his mill-wheel.

It is needless to add that Richard Waldron was the great man of his village. More than this, he had held not a few important civil and military offices under the province, and was at this very moment a major of militia, then an office nearly equivalent to that of a county lieutenant in England, and in war-times one of high responsibility. Waldron was now about seventy-five years old, hale, hearty, and vigorous, and, unless report does him wrong, as hard to move as the dam of his own mill.

Five block-houses guarded the settlement, for Dover touched the very edge of the wilderness. Waldron's, Otis's, and Heard's were on the north side of the river, and Peter Coffin's and his son's on the south side. All

were surrounded by walls built of timber, with gates securely bolted and barred at night, at which time those families whose homes were not thus protected came into the nearest garrison to sleep. In the morning, if all was safe, they went back to their own houses again.

Garrison  
houses.

This was Dover. This was border life. Yet even its dangers had their charm. It was the making of a robust race of men and women, whose nursery tales were the tragedies of Indian warfare or captivity, and who, as they grew up, became skilled in the use of arms, keen in tracking the bear or the moose, and almost as capable of withstanding hunger or hardship as the wild Indians themselves.

Though they did not know it, the people of Dover were actually walking between life and death. They had forgotten; but an Indian never forgets or forgives an injury until it is avenged. For years the memory of Waldron's treachery had rankled deep. It is no pleasant tale we have to tell, yet it is all true.

During the expiring struggles of Philip's War, some thirteen years before, Waldron had made a peace with the Pennacook, Ossipee, and Pigwacket tribes, by which the calamities of that war were wholly kept from him and his neighbors. It was a shrewd move thus to keep these restive Indians quiet. In the treaty the Indians promised, among other things, not to harbor any enemies of the English, meaning Philip's men. The Indians shook hands with Waldron upon it, and were allowed to come and go as freely as they liked.

This promise, however, was not kept. On the contrary, it is certain that many of Philip's followers fled to the Pennacooks for protection. Indian hospitality could

not refuse these fugitives an asylum, hunted as they were by the unrelenting vengeance of their conquerors. To give them up was indeed a hard condition, which it is not surprising to find disregarded. In other respects the tribes mentioned seemed to have lived up to their treaty obligations.

But other tribes, living on the Androscoggin and Kennebec Rivers, who had been parties to the same treaty, were easily led to take up the hatchet again, and were soon busy at their old work of killing and plundering the defenceless settlers. Help being called for to put down this fresh outbreak, two companies were presently marched from Boston to their relief.

When these soldiers came to Dover they found some hundreds of friendly Indians gathered there, as it would seem, to trade with, or have a talk with, their father and friend, Major Waldron. And though they came armed, no good ground appears for supposing that they harbored any hostile intent whatever.

It was then and there that Major Waldron dealt them the most terrible blow they had ever received—a blow struck, as it were, behind the back.

The two captains, Sill and Hawthorne, having to seize all Indians who had been out with them wherever found, upon being told that many of these Indians were among those now present, would have fallen upon them at once without more words. But Waldron was more wary. A plan had arranged itself in his mind, by which the whole body of Indians could be taken without striking a blow.

He proposed to the Indians to celebrate the meeting by having a sham fight, after the English fashion, to

unted as they  
eir conquerors.  
dition, which it  
other respects  
ed up to their

oggin and Ken-  
e same treaty,  
gain, and were  
nd plundering  
led for to put  
were presently

ey found some  
re, as it would  
a, their father  
And though  
round appears  
hostile intent

on dealt them  
sived—a blow

having,  
with 1  
of these v  
t, would have  
words. But  
rranged itself  
Indians could

e the meeting  
sh fashion, to

which they readily consented. Meantime, he called up Captain Frost's company from Kittery, and got his own men under arms. These, with the two marching companies, gave him all the force he needed to carry out his deep-laid plan.

The next day the two bodies, English and Indians, were drawn up for the sham battle, into which the unsuspecting redskins entered with much spirit. Meantime, while going through with certain simple manoeuvres, the English were quietly surrounding them. Still mistrusting nothing, the Indians opened the fight by firing the first volley. When their guns were discharged, the soldiers rushed in upon them, and seized and disarmed them without the loss of a man on either side. In this manner upward of four hundred Indians were taken like so many silly herring in a net.

They were then separated. Those known to be friendly were allowed to go in peace, but all those suspected of having aided Philip, numbering some two hundred in all, were sent under guard to Boston as prisoners, where seven or eight were hanged and the rest sold out of the country as slaves. It is true that those hanged were known to have been concerned in some of the bloodiest massacres of the war. Those sold helped to defray the expense of their capture. And all the people said amen!

So now, long years after, some of the same Indians who had been thus entrapped by Waldron laid their plans to be revenged. When it was found that the Dover people had fallen into careless habits, kept no watches, and would even let the Indians sleep in their houses, these plans were ripe for execution. It is true that some hints of intended mischief had been thrown

out in a vague sort of way, but the careless settlers hardly listened to them.

When Waldron himself was spoken to about it, he jocosely told the uneasy ones to go and plant their pumpkins, and that he would tell them when the Indians would break out.

As the time fixed for the assault drew near, the two chiefs, Kankamagus and Mesandowit, brought their followers to within striking distance of the village.<sup>1</sup> Indian cunning was then set to work. On Thursday evening, June 27, 1689, two squaws went to each of the five garrisons and asked leave to sleep there that night. It being wet weather, they were readily admitted to all except the younger Coffin's, though the people at Waldron's offered some objection, until the bluff but kind-hearted old major himself quieted them by saying, "Let the poor creatures lodge by the fire." They were even shown how to unbar the doors, and let themselves out, without troubling the people of the house. Coffin, more prudent, or less hospitable than the rest, bluntly refused them admittance.

Mesandowit himself went boldly to Waldron's, where he was kindly received, all the more readily because he announced that a good many Indians were coming there to trade the next day. While the two were sitting at supper, like old friends, the chief jestingly asked, "Brother Waldron, what would you do if the strange Indians should come?"

"A hundred men stand ready when I lift my finger, thus," was Waldron's lofty reply.

Not dreaming of the storm so ready to burst upon them,

<sup>1</sup> It is known that some of the assailants came all the way from the St. John River, showing wide-spread preparation.

settlers hardly

o about it, he  
ad plant their  
when the Ind-

y near, the two  
ught their fol-  
lage.<sup>1</sup> Indian  
rsday evening,  
of the five gar-  
hat night. It  
mitted to all  
people at Wal-  
dron but kind-  
m by saying,  
" They were  
let themselves  
house. Coffin,  
e rest, bluntly

ldron's, where  
adily because  
were coming  
o were sitting  
stingly asked,  
f the strange

lift my finger,

rst upon them,

a the St. John River,

the inhabitants went to bed at the usual early hour. So far as known, not even one solitary sentinel stood guard over the doomed village. When all was still, the faithless squaws noiselessly arose, quietly unbarred the doors of the four garrisons, and gave the signal agreed upon—a low whistle. Instantly the warriors, who had been lying in wait outside, rushed in. Roused from sleep by the noise, Waldron barely had time to jump out of bed, pull on his breeches, and snatch up his sword, before the infuriated wretches, who were in search of him, came crowding into the room, tomahawk in hand. But the fiery old man was not to be taken without a struggle. Half-dressed, with his gray head bare, Waldron yet laid about him so lustily as not only to clear his own room of assailants, but also to drive them before him into the next. There was still a chance for his life, and he hastened to improve it. His musket and pistols had been left lying in his own room. Waldron therefore started to secure them. Seizing the moment when his back was turned, a savage sprang forward and brained the brave old man with a blow of the hatchet from behind.

Grievously wounded, but still breathing, Waldron was now dragged into the great room, a chair put upon a long table, where he had often sat as judge, and his half-lifeless body roughly lifted into it, while his captors made ready to gratify Waldron tortured to death. their long-nursed vengeance with savage ingenuity and more than savage barbarity.

"Who shall judge Indians now?" they asked the dying man, with grim irony.

Not to cut short Waldron's sufferings, his tormentors commanded other captives to get them some victuals. When they had swallowed their hideous meal, with the



worthy major still sitting there, stunned and bleeding to death, in his chair, these miscreants first stripped him of his shirt, and then took turns at slashing him with their knives across the breast, each one crying out as he did so, "See! I cross out my account!" They then severed his fingers, one by one, at the joints, asking in mockery if his fist would weigh a pound now.<sup>1</sup>

By this time Waldron was so far gone that strength failed him. Seeing him about to fall, one of the Indians held up the point of the major's own sword, so that as the dying man pitched head-foremost upon the table, the weapon passed quite through his lifeless body.

After killing or taking all who were in the house, the savages first plundered it and then set it on fire.

Meantime, other parties, led by the chief Kankamagus, were similarly engaged at the other garrisons. Heard's was saved by the barking of the house-dog, just as the Indians were stealthily gliding in at the gate. One of the inmates, with rare courage and presence of mind, ran to the spot, thrust the intruders out, shut to the gate, and held it so by throwing himself flat on his back, and bracing his feet against the gate, until the rest of the people came to his assistance.

The elder Coffin's house was taken and ransacked, but the lives of the inmates were spared. Finding a bag of money here, the Indians made Coffin scatter it by handfuls over the floor, while they amused themselves by scrambling for it, like so many mischievous boys. This was their way of making an impartial division of the money.

<sup>1</sup> It was said that Waldron was in the habit of putting his fist into the scale as a make-weight against their furs.

and bleeding  
first stripped  
slashing him  
one crying out  
ount!" They  
he joints, ask-  
ound now.<sup>1</sup>

that strength  
of the Indians  
rd, so that as  
oon the table,  
ess body.

he house, the  
n fire.

ief Kankama-  
ner garrisons.  
he house-dog,  
ing in at the  
age and pres-  
ot, thrust the  
e, and held it  
d bracing his  
people came

and ransacked,  
. Finding a  
fin scatter it  
mused them-  
mischievous  
partial divis-

into the scale as a

Young Coffin stoutly refused to surrender, until the Indians brought out his old father, and threatened to kill him before his son's eyes. He then gave himself up. Both families were then put in a deserted house together, but not being closely watched, all made their escape while the Indians were engaged in plundering the captured houses.

This was a sad day for Dover. Twenty-three persons had lost their lives, and twenty-nine more were being carried off, captives. Five or six houses, with the mills, were burned to the ground, all being done so quickly that the elated assailants were able to decamp without meeting with the least opposition, loaded with booty and exulting in the manner in which they had "crossed out their account" with Major Waldron.

It is but just to add that the conduct of the savages during the sacking of Dover was not without some redeeming features. While certain persons seem to have been marked for unrelenting vengeance, others were spared, and still others not even molested. But the main circumstance is this: A new departure took place in regard to the treatment of prisoners. Instead of wearing out a miserable existence among the Indians, as in times past, they were now mostly taken to Canada and sold to the French, whose treatment was at least humane, although it was only a change of masters, not of condition, for the prisoners were held to belong to those who had bought them until ransomed by their friends. True, such conduct is wholly without warrant among civilized nations. But there was no appeal. The savages treated all prisoners as slaves, and disposed of them as such. And it must be admitted that the course taken by the English in selling their Indian captives into slavery

fully justified this species of retaliation, by which the English were, by far, the greatest losers. Be that as it may, just as soon as a living captive had a money value greater than a scalp, it became to the interest of the Indians to save, rather than slay, those who fell into their hands. To this extent the policy is to be hailed as a distinct melioration in the conduct of these barbarous wars.

Sad to relate, the terrible calamity which befell the people of Dover might have been averted by the timely delivery of a letter. The design was disclosed to Major Henschman, at Chelmsford, who immediately informed the Massachusetts authorities of it. A letter containing this intelligence, and written by their order, was despatched to Major Waldron on the day before the massacre; but owing to some delay to the courier at Newbury the warning reached Dover some hours too late. Waldron in particular was notified that he was a special object of vengeance. The feelings with which this letter was opened and read by his son may be imagined.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> THE letter is in Belknap's *New Hampshire*, I., Appendix. The friendly warning is said to have come from Wanalancet, sagamore of Pennacook.

by which the  
Be that as it  
money value  
st of the Ind-  
ell into their  
e hailed as a  
e barbarous

h befell the  
y the timely  
sed to Major  
ly informed  
r containing  
er, was de-  
ore the mas-  
rier at New-  
urs too late.  
was a special  
ich this let-  
imagined.<sup>1</sup>

friendly warning is

### III

#### THE CAPTIVITY OF SARAH GERRISH

AMONG the captives taken at the sacking of Dover was Major Waldron's little granddaughter, Sarah Gerrish, a beautiful and interesting child, only seven years old, who slept at her grandfather's garrison on that fatal night.

Waked out of a sound sleep by the strange noises in the house, Sarah sprang from her warm bed and ran, in a fright, into another room, where one of her little playmates was sleeping. Child-like, the little simpleton crept into bed with her still more helpless neighbor, for mutual protection, pulling the bedclothes up over her head, as if imagining that in this way she might escape detection. With a beating heart she lay there listening to the muffled noises made by the savages in searching through the house.

Her hiding-place was, however, soon discovered, and she was rudely commanded to get up and dress herself, which she very obediently did, though the savages hurried her out of doors before she had time to finish putting on her stockings. With one foot bare she was presently marched off with the rest of the captives into the wilderness, after seeing her grandfather's house plundered and burned before her eyes.

According to their usual custom, when once clear of the village the different bands went their several ways,

after dividing the prisoners and booty. Sarah appears to have gone with a party of Eastern Indians, doubtless belonging to some Maine tribe, to whose village she was first taken, and in which she remained till winter.

Sarah's first master, one Sebundowit, a dull sort of fellow, was harsh, but not cruel. He, however, soon sold her to another Indian, who was both harsh and cruel, who carried her away to Canada to be sold.

No tongue can tell the hardships which this child of tender years had to undergo during that long and terrible winter's march. Strong men have sunk down under less than she endured, the petted darling of a once happy home, now made desolate. But a Protecting Arm seems to have sustained the little captive maiden when her feet were ready to fail her, and her heart to break, under the hardships of which she was the innocent object.

At one time her wretch of a master told her to go and stand with her back against a particular tree, while he began loading his gun before her eyes, with tantalizing indifference. When the truth flashed upon the child's mind, and she shrieked out in mortal terror at the thought that her last hour was come, the hardened wretch, whose ferocious instincts seemed now and then to get the better of him, either relented or was satisfied with having attained his object in frightening her so cruelly.

At another time, as they were ascending a river, her brute of a master ordered Sarah to run along the shore with some Indian girls, while he paddled on in his canoe. In this manner they had reached a spot where the bank was both high and steep, when one of Sarah's impish companions spitefully pushed the little white girl off the bank and into the river, leaving her to sink or swim as best she might. Fortunately the bushes here hung

Sarah appears  
as, doubtless  
age she was  
winter.

dull sort of  
however, soon  
harsh and  
sold.

his child of  
ing and terri-  
down under  
once happy  
Arm seems  
hen her feet  
t, under the  
ect.

er to go and  
e, while he  
tantalizing  
the child's  
he thought  
etch, whose  
t the better  
having at-

7.  
e river, her  
g the shore  
his canoe.  
e the bank  
h's impish  
te girl off  
k or swim  
here hung

out over the water, so that when Sarah rose to the surface she was able to lay hold of them and draw herself out of the water by their aid. Otherwise she must certainly have been drowned then and there. As it was, she rejoined her wolfish companions, wet to the skin, and frightened almost to death at her narrow escape. Yet when asked how she became so wet she dared not tell, for fear of meeting with still worse treatment from the Indian boys and girls, who were always very abusive to her.

Once again, having fallen into a deep sleep at the end of a long and hard day's travel, Sarah did not wake when the party was ready to move off in the morning, so she was left asleep, half covered up with fresh-fallen snow, like another babe in the woods, without a morsel of food to eat or any guide by which to know what direction her heartless companions had taken. Upon waking to find herself left alone in that frightful wilderness, the poor little captive may well have given herself up for lost, for, strange to say, she seems to have been even more afraid of the bears and wolves of the forests than of her inhuman captors. Terror sharpened her wits. Snow had fallen before the party set out, by which their tracks could be followed. Guided by these footprints in the snow, Sarah ran crying after them, until, after a long and weary chase, her tormentors let her come up with them again.

Yet one more ordeal was contrived, with devilish ingenuity, to play upon poor little Sarah's fears. One evening the savages heaped together a great pile of dry brushwood, to which they set fire, and when it was in a light blaze Sarah's master called her to him, and told her that she must now be burned alive in the fire. For the

moment the child was struck dumb. Then she burst into tears. Turning to the inhuman monster who claimed her, she flung her arms around his neck and besought him so piteously to spare her life that the hardened cut-throat so far relented as to agree not to burn her alive if she would promise to be a good girl.

After escaping death by fire and water, Sarah reached Canada at last, where her sad story, no less than her bright face and winning ways, could not fail of exciting compassion. Indeed, it must have been a heart of stone not to have melted toward the friendless one. Her greedy master first took her to the Lord Intendant's, where much notice was taken of her by persons of quality. In the course of a week Sarah was bought by the Intendant's lady, who placed the child in a convent, where she was once more, safe in the hands of Christians. Here she remained until the fleet of Sir William Phips came before Quebec, the next year, when through his means Sarah was exchanged, and returned to her friends again, after a captivity lasting sixteen months, into which years of suffering had been crowded.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> BELKNAP tells the story briefly in a note, *History of New Hampshire*, I., 253. Phips had taken some French prisoners while on his way to besiege Quebec.

she burst  
who claimed  
d besought  
rdened cut-  
n her alive

rah reached  
s than her  
of exciting  
art of stone  
Her greedy  
t's, where  
uality. In  
he Intend-  
where she  
ns. Here  
hips came  
his means  
nds again,  
hich years

psahire, I., 258.  
e Quebec.

#### IV

### PEMAQUID TAKEN; WITH THE RELATION OF JOHN GYLES

August, 1689

It was now St. Castin's turn to be revenged. True, an attempt had been made by the new rulers to pacify him with fair words, but all to no purpose. A more implacable foe never devastated the border; and though he dealt much with the English, by way of trade, being in no way averse to English gold, no hand was ever more ready to strike them than his. He had the twin passions of a true Bernais—love of war and St. Castin of Penobscot. love of money. His is a strange, eventful history. Reared a gentleman, and by profession a soldier, upon the disbanding of his regiment he had taken up the vagabond life of an Indian trader with as much facility as if he had never known any other; had taken a chief's daughter to wife; and had thus, to all intents, cast his fortunes for weal or woe among the filthy denizens of the forest. And the erratic Baron La Hontan, soldier, traveller, and author of the most amusing memoirs in the world, roundly asserts that St. Castin was so much respected by his savage clansmen that they looked up to him as their tutelary deity. If report was true, he had amassed a fortune of two or three hundred thousand crowns in "good, dry gold" among them. No wonder, then, that he stood ready to draw his sword in their behalf.



Accordingly, there was much bustle of preparation at St. Castin's fort for the descent he meditated. This had for its object no less a place than the fort and settlement at Pemaquid, farthest outpost of the English dominions, in this direction, as Penobscot was of French power in the other. The distance between them **Pemaquid and Penobscot.** was considerable, yet St. Castin's hatred would not have cooled, even if the distance had been ten times greater.

When all was ready the war-party put off in their canoes. St. Castin and Father Thury, of the Indian mission, with the Abenaki chief Moxus, were the leaders. The scheme was a bold one, it must be confessed; **Moxus and Father Thury.** so bold, indeed, that there is little doubt on the invaders being well informed of the true state of the fort and garrison. Spies were sent ahead to New Harbor, an out-village of Pemaquid, to learn how the inhabitants disposed themselves in the daytime, and how best to strike them unawares.

The blow fell on one August afternoon in 1689. St. Castin's war-party gained the rocky shore undiscovered. They soon laid hands upon a white man, who disclosed the defenceless condition of the place. It was in harvest time, when the unsuspecting settlers were busy, either in the fields or about the shores. The main village, in which only the women and children were left, lay about a quarter of a mile from the fort. The farms, where most of the men were at work, were three miles higher up, at the Falls.

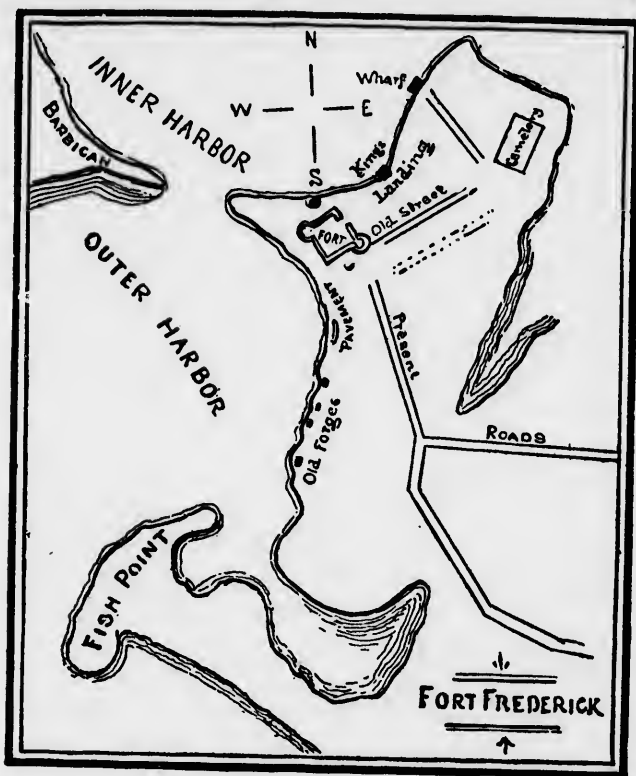
The assailants quickly arranged their plan of attack. One band threw itself between the fort and the village; the other between the village and farms. Then the work of slaughter began. As the men at the farms ran

paration at  
This had  
settlement  
dominions,  
h power in  
ween them  
in's hatred  
d been ten

ff in their  
the Indian  
the lead-  
confessed;  
ittle doubt  
med of the  
were sent  
maquid, to  
ves in the  
es.

1689. St.  
iscovered.  
disclosed  
as in har-  
ere busy,  
main vil-  
were left,  
The farms,  
ree miles

for the fort, they found themselves cut off by the band below. In like manner, those in the village, who started for the fort, were mostly intercepted before reaching it.



FORT AND APPROACHES, PEMAQUID, ME.

of attack.  
e village;  
Then the  
farms ran

The few who did so owed their safety to fleetness of foot.

The assailants next turned their attention to the fort. A certain number threw themselves into some houses, standing along the street leading to it, from which they

fired on every one who showed himself. The high rock, as conspicuous an object to-day as it was then, also served to shelter more of them, who were thus advanced so near the walls as to be able to drive the gunners from their posts.

Weems, the commander of the fort, held out until the next day, when having but fourteen out of thirty men left unhurt, besides being wounded himself, he gave up the place on condition that the garrison should be allowed to depart unmolested. Fort and village were then given to the flames, after which the Indians took to their canoes, with their captives and booty, greatly elated at their conquest of this stronghold of the English.

The following relation, set forth by one of the captives, describes in a graphic manner the onset at the Falls:

“On the 2d of August, 1689, in the morning, my honored father, Thomas Gyles, Esq., went with some laborers, my two older brothers and myself to one of his farms, which lay upon the river, about three miles above Fort Charles, at Pemaquid Falls, and we labored there securely till noon. After we had dined, our people went to their labor, some in one field of English hay, some to another of English corn. My father, the youngest of my two brothers and myself tarried near the farm-house in which we had dined till about one of the clock, at which time we heard the report of several great guns at the fort. My father said he hoped it was a signal of good news, and that the great council had sent back the soldiers to cover the inhabitants (for on report of the revolution they had deserted).

“But to our great surprise, about thirty or forty Ind-

ians at that moment discharged a volley of shot at us from behind a rising ground near our barn. The yelling of the Indians, the whistling of their shot, and the voice of my father, whom I heard cry out, 'What now! what now!' so terrified me (though he seemed to be handling a gun) that I endeavored to make my escape. My brother ran one way, and I another, and on looking over my shoulder I saw a stout fellow, all painted, pursuing me, with a gun in one hand and a cutlass glittering in the other, which I expected in my brains every moment.

"I soon fell down, and the Indian seized me by the left hand. He offered me no abuse, but tied my arms, then lifted me up and pointed to the place where the people were at work about the hay, and led me that way. As we went, we crossed the spot where my father was, who looked very pale and bloody, and walked very slowly.

"When we came to the place, I saw two men shot down on the flats, and one or two more knocked on the head with hatchets, while crying out, 'O, Lord! O, Lord!' etc. There the Indians brought two more captives, one a man, and the other my brother James, who, with me, had tried to escape by running from the house when we were first attacked. This brother was about fourteen years of age. My oldest brother, Thomas, wonderfully escaped by land to the Barbiçan, a point of land opposite the fort, where several fishing vessels lay. He got on board of one of them and sailed away that night.

"After doing what mischief they could, the Indians sat down, and made us sit with them. After some time we arose, and the Indians pointed for us to go eastward. We marched about a quarter of a mile and then made a halt. Here they brought my father to us. They made propo-

sals to him by old Moxus, who told him that those were strange Indians who shot him, and that he was sorry for it. My father replied that he was a dying man, and wanted no favor but to pray with his children. This being granted, he commended us to the protection and blessing of God Almighty; then gave us his best advice and took his leave of us for this life, hoping that we should meet in a better.

*Moxus is sorry.* "He parted from us with a cheerful voice, but looked very pale, by reason of his great loss of blood, which now gushed out of his shoes. The Indians then led him aside. I heard the blows of the hatchet, but neither shriek nor groan.

"The Indians led us, on the east side of the river, toward the fort, and when we came within a mile and a half of the fort and town, we saw fire and smoke rising on all sides. Here we made a short stop, and then moved on to within three-quarters of a mile from the fort, into a thick swamp. There I saw my mother and my two little sisters, and many other captives taken from the town. My mother asked me about my father. I told her he was killed, but could say no more for grief. She burst into tears, and the Indians moved me a little farther off, and seized<sup>1</sup> me with cords to a tree.

"After the Indians had laid Pemaquid waste they moved up to New Harbor, about two miles farther east. *Embark at New Harbor.* At this place there were, before the war, about twelve houses. These were deserted as soon as the rumor of war reached the place. When we turned our backs on the town my heart was ready to break. We tarried that night at New Harbor, and the next day went away in the Indians' canoes for Penobscot.

<sup>1</sup> A SEAFARING expression for tied him up.

"A few days after we arrived at Penobscot fort,<sup>1</sup> where I again saw my mother, my brother and sisters, and many other captives. I think we tarried here eight days. In that time the Jesuit of the place had a great mind to buy me. My Indian master made a visit to the Jesuit, and took me with him. **Antipathy to Jesuits.** I saw the Jesuit show my master pieces of gold, and understood afterward that he was tendering them for my ransom. He gave me a biscuit, which I put in my pocket, and not daring to eat it, I buried it under a log, fearing he had put something in it to make me love him. When my mother heard the talk of my being sold to a Jesuit, she said to me, 'Oh, my dear child, if it were God's will, I had rather follow you to your grave, or nevermore see you in this world, than that you should be sold to a Jesuit; for a Jesuit will ruin you body and soul.'

"It pleased God to grant her request, for she never saw me more. Yet she and my two little sisters were, after several years' captivity, redeemed; but she died ere I returned. My brother, who was taken with me, was, after several years' captivity, most barbarously tortured to death by the Indians.

"My Indian master carried me up Penobscot River to Madawamkee,<sup>2</sup> which stands on a point of land between the main river and a branch which heads to the east of it. At home I had ever seen strangers treated with the utmost civility, and I expected like treatment here; but I soon found out my mistake; for I presently saw a number of squaws, who had **Madawamkee.** got together in a circle, dancing and yelling. An old grim-looking hag took me by the hand, and leading me

<sup>1</sup> Now Castine, Me.

<sup>2</sup> MATTAWAMKEE is probably meant.

into the ring, some seized me by the hair, and others by the hands and feet, like so many furies ; but my master presently laying down a pledge, they released me.<sup>1</sup>

“The next day we went up that eastern branch of Penobscot River many leagues ; carried overland to a large pond, and from one pond to another, till, in a few days more, we went down a river called Medocktec, which empties into St. John River. But before we came to

the mouth of this river, we passed over a long carrying-place to Medocktec fort,<sup>2</sup> which stands on a bank of St. John River. My master went before, and left me with an old Indian and two or three squaws. The old man often said (which was all the English he could speak), ‘By and by come to a great town and fort.’ I now comforted myself in thinking how finely I should be refreshed when I came to this great town.

“After some miles’ travel we came in sight of a large cornfield, and soon after of the fort, to my great surprise. Two or three squaws met us, took off my pack, and led me to a large hut or wigwam, where thirty or forty Indians were dancing and yelling round five or six poor captives, who had been taken some months before from Quochecho,<sup>3</sup> at the time Major Waldron was so barbarously butchered by them.

“After some weeks had passed, we left this village and went up the St. John River about ten miles, to a branch called Medockcenecasis, where there was one wigwam. At our arrival an old squaw saluted me with a yell, tak-

<sup>1</sup> THE owner of a captive might ransom him from torture in this way, if so inclined. Otherwise the custom was to first hand him over to the squaws, and afterward to the warriors.

<sup>2</sup> MEDOCKTEC, a Mallicite village on the St. John River.

<sup>3</sup> COCHECO, the Indian name of Dover, N. H. The complicity of these Indians in that affair is thus proven.

ing me by the hair and one hand, but I was so rude as to break her hold and free myself. She gave me a filthy grin, and the Indians set up a laugh, and so it passed over. Here we lived upon fish, wild grapes, roots, &c., which was hard living to me.

"When the winter came on we went up the river till the ice came down, running thick in the river, when, according to the Indian custom, we laid up our canoes till spring. Then we travelled sometimes on the ice and sometimes on the land, till we came to a river that was open, but not fordable, where we made a raft and passed over, bag and baggage. I met with no abuse from them in this winter's hunting, though put to great hardships in carrying burdens, and for want of food. But they endured the same difficulty, and would often encourage me by saying in broken English, 'By and by great deal moose.'"<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> AFTER spending six years in captivity among the Indians of the St. John River, young Gyles was sold to a French trader of that river, with whom he lived nearly three years longer. He was not released until the peace of Ryswick, thus having been almost nine years a captive. Gyles subsequently became a partisan officer of much merit, his knowledge of the Indian tongue, gained during his captivity, standing him in good stead. The *Memoir* from which the above extracts are taken, and put into coherent form, was first printed at Boston in 1736. In a copy which belonged to Dr. Belknap, now in the Boston Public Library, there is a note, in Dr. Belknap's hand, on the fly-leaf, ascribing the authorship to Joseph Seccombe, chaplain to the garrison at St. Georges, afterward minister of Kingston, N. H. It is a wretched piece of work, whoever wrote it.



## V

### CHURCH'S FIRST EXPEDITION

September, 1689

AFTER the fall of Pemaquid all the English settlements east of Casco, or Falmouth, were hurriedly abandoned, and this place now became the rallying point for the fugitives, who were still laboring under the evil effects of the panic, into which the enemy's successes had thrown them.

Aroused by the pressing nature of the emergency, the Massachusetts authorities, responding to the cries for help coming from all quarters at once, promptly called out six hundred men, who took up their line of march **Swaine's march**, from the rendezvous, at Berwick, on **August 28th.** August 28, 1689, to clear the border of enemies, strengthen the weak garrisons, and restore the failing courage of the inhabitants as they went. Major Jeremiah Swaine,<sup>1</sup> a good officer, was in command of this small army.

This was not done a moment too soon, as the daring enemy were now hovering about every settlement on the coast, from Berwick to Falmouth, killing, **Blue Point and Falmouth relieved.** scalping, and burning on every side, until Swaine's advance drove them back into the woods. At Blue Point,<sup>2</sup> in Scarborough, there was a smart skirmish, and when the troops reached Fal-

<sup>1</sup> SWAINE was of Reading, Mass.

<sup>2</sup> SINCE called Pine Point. Swaine urged holding the fort at Saco Falls on account of the saw and grist mill there. *Letter of September 24, 1689.*

mouth they found that place as good as invested by the enemy, who made a sharp fight, in which ten soldiers were killed, before being driven off the ground.

Having done the work assigned him in this direction, and put new life into the desponding settlers, Swaine



COLONEL BENJAMIN CHURCH.

marched back to Berwick the way he came. His march, back and forth, disclosed the weakness of the whole system of defence; for Swaine had no sooner uncovered the towns in his rear, after taking with him every available man that could be spared, than the Indians swooped down upon Durham,

**Durham  
attacked.**

N. H.,<sup>1</sup> killing eighteen men, murdering three or four children, and carrying off several persons into captivity.<sup>2</sup>

Swaine immediately despatched a strong scouting party toward Lake Winnepesaukee to hunt the assassins down, but, as usual, no Indians could be found, and the party returned empty-handed. These operations terminated Swaine's share in this campaign.

While putting forth these efforts to hold what was left of Maine, Massachusetts called the United Colonies<sup>3</sup> to her aid. A second expedition, acting in concert with Swaine's, but designed to carry the war into the devastated region, east of Falmouth, was raised chiefly in Plymouth Colony, and put under the command of Major Church, the tried veteran of Philip's War. A part of the two hundred and fifty men enlisted for this service were

**Church takes** Seconnet and Cape Cod Indians, some of  
**the field.** whom had been out with Church before. They were true Indians. During their stay in Boston they had even sold their powder-horns and bullet-pouches to get money to squander for drink. Then the ammunition furnished was not of proper size to fit the bore of the guns. All this seems to have been unknown to Church, until the moment when he was going into action.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> USUALLY called Oyster River in the accounts of these wars.

<sup>2</sup> THIS bloody affair took place at Huckins's garrison. Seeing all the men go out to work in the morning, the Indians ran between them and the house, killing all but one, who made his escape. They then attacked the house, in which there were only two boys, with some women and children. The boys kept them off for some time, and wounded several of them. At length the Indians set the house on fire, but even then these brave boys would not surrender until the Indians had promised to spare their lives. The wretches, however, immediately murdered three or four of the children, one of whom was impaled on a sharp stake before the eyes of its horrified mother. One of the boys escaped the next day.—Belknap, *New Hampshire*, I., 255, ed. 1792.

<sup>3</sup> A UNION formed by Massachusetts, Plymouth, New Haven, and Connecticut in 1643 for mutual defence.

<sup>4</sup> THE expedition was not half supplied with clothing, medicines, or provisions, and yet this was the season of autumnal storms.

Embarking at Boston, the expedition arrived at Fal-mouth on Friday, September 20, 1689. Immediately upon coming into the harbor Church found work ready cut out for him. He was hailed from a vessel and told that large numbers of Indians had been seen gathering on one of the neighboring islands, as if getting ready to make a descent. On board of a vessel lying at anchor, Church found a Mrs. Lee,<sup>1</sup> a redeemed captive, who said that she had counted Gets to Fal-mouth, September 20th. fifty canoes, and knew that more were expected. To resist this formidable horde there were only two companies of soldiers in the fort and garrisons, besides the handful of inhabitants. Church had not come a moment too soon.

As soon as it was dark, Church landed his men, fully intending to go in search of these marauders at day-break; but they saved him the trouble by coming up close to the neck, on which the village stood, some time during the night; so that the morning found them holding a position to cut off all retreat by land, whenever they advanced to attack the village.

In fact, when the sun was about an hour high, firing was heard in the direction of Anthony Brackett's farmhouse,<sup>2</sup> situated over against the neck, on the westerly side of a cove making in from the sea. Presently Brackett's son came running into the village with the news that the farm was swarming with strange Indians, who had taken his father prisoner. His own escape was owing to his fleetness of foot.

Though completely taken at a disadvantage, Church acted with promptitude and vigor. First, sending off

<sup>1</sup> A MARRIED daughter of Major Waldron, taken at Dover, N. H.

<sup>2</sup> SINCE the property of the Deering family.

one company belonging to the garrison, he followed it with one of his own, expecting to send in the rest as soon as they could be got ready. It being low tide, the two advance companies crossed the cove, and were immediately hotly engaged in and about Brackett's field and orchard, thus putting the cove between them and their comrades. Instead of coming promptly to their relief with his whole force,

The enemy's attack repulsed.

Brackett's field and orchard, thus putting the cove between them and their comrades. Instead of coming promptly to their relief with his whole force,



PLAN OF FALMOUTH NECK, PORTLAND.

Church now made the startling discovery that the bullets were too large for the guns, causing a long delay, while the bullets were being hammered into slugs, and putting the small detachment, then fighting against great odds, in danger of being cut to pieces before help could reach them. When these lag-guards did come up, they found themselves cut off from their hard-pressed comrades by the rising tide. They,

Church's critical situation.

ho  
at  
we  
his  
cor  
cor

T

was

abl

for

did

one

old

wou

pos

by

unex

such

wret

B

galla

inha

vict

says

of F

hone

he b

H

prob

unsu

however, opened a random fire across the cove. Church at length reached the spot. Seeing the danger his men were in, he succeeded in getting across the cove with his main body, higher up, and decided the combat by coming down on the enemy's flank. They then fled in confusion.

This fight, really forced upon Church before he was ready, or acquainted with the ground, was creditable only to the small number, who bore the brunt of it for several hours without flinching. It saved Casco, but did not help Church's reputation. His loss was twenty-one killed and wounded.<sup>1</sup> As the enemy followed their old custom of carrying off the dead and wounded, no estimate of their loss was possible. It was enough that they confessed defeat by making a precipitate retreat. That the battle was unexpectedly thrust upon Church is true; but that such an old campaigner as he should take the field so wretchedly equipped is certainly surprising.

His losses.

By those who first faced the foe, the battle was gallantly, even desperately, fought. Among them, the inhabitants came in for a full share of the credit for the victory. There is a touch of humor in what Church says in his despatches<sup>2</sup> in regard to the fighting parson of Falmouth. "As for the minister of this place," the honest soldier declares, "I am well satisfied with him, he being present with us yesterday in the fight."

Having disposed of this body of enemies, who were probably ignorant of his arrival when they began their unsuccessful onset, Church now found himself at lib-

<sup>1</sup> A LIST of these will be found in S. G. Drake's *Additions to Baylies's New Plymouth*, p. 77.

<sup>2</sup> DATED at Falmouth, September 22, 1689.

erty to carry out his favorite idea of tracking the savages to their villages and striking them there. There were two of these on the Androscoggin, and as many more on the Kennebec, situated far enough inland not to be easily assailable, yet near enough to the sea to be dangerous neighbors. It was from these Indians that the English had most to fear, and it was they, no doubt, who had taken the lead in the recent assault.

Owing chiefly to the want of proper guides, nearly a month passed before Church was ready to set forth on this errand. Moving his force up to the head of Maquoit Bay by vessel, he struck across the great Indian portage uniting the waters of Casco Bay with those of the Androscoggin, coming out on the banks of the  
**Maquoit Portage.** Androscoggin at a point some forty miles below the Indian fort at which he was aiming. He found the low country everywhere flooded by the autumnal freshets. Abandoning his first design, he therefore turned down the river, marching on until his vessels took him up again in the Kennebec. He then set sail for Pemaquid, where his men did some scouting, but could find no Indians. All the fresh trails led eastward, thus indicating that the enemy's war-parties had drawn off from their inroads for the season. After taking on board some of the heavy guns belonging to the ruined fort, Church therefore sailed back to Casco, in a storm, and the campaign closed without a solitary exploit to its credit except the relief of Casco.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> CHURCH'S *History* contains a lengthy, but rambling, account of his operations. Letters from him, written from Falmouth at the time, are much more coherent. See *Additions to Baylies's New Plymouth*.

e sav-  
There  
many  
d not  
to be  
s that  
doubt,

arly a  
th on  
quoit  
ortage  
dros-  
f the  
miles  
He  
e au-  
here-  
ssels  
t sail  
, but  
east-  
had  
tak-  
o the  
in a  
y ex-

ations.  
t. See

## VI

## FRONTENAC'S WINTER RAIDS

March, 1690

AFTER this war had been going on for a year or more with the Indians alone, a new enemy suddenly appeared in the French, who, from this time forward, became open enemies, instead of the secret ones they had been. War had been formally declared between the two crowns, England and France, and the colonies of both must now bear their part in it.<sup>1</sup> It is true that some sensible men had thought of a neutrality for the colonies, as being a far more rational course than cutting each other's throats without contributing one iota to the final result between the great belligerents. But this wise and eminently humane idea did not meet with favor either at the French court or from the man now at the head of affairs in Canada. There were fifty reasons why Louis should desire the conquest of New England, to one why England should wish to possess Canada, which at that day she had no use for, and certainly did not covet. Control of the fisheries, control of the Indian trade, but more especially control over the one great gate-way to Canada—the St. Lawrence—were the foremost of these reasons.

War with  
France.

Canada not  
menaced.

<sup>1</sup> WAR was declared at Westminster, April, 1689; at Boston not until December.



On the other hand, New England asked only to be let alone. There was then no such thing as an American colonial policy, although war between the two great powers most interested in America was as certain to create one as that the sun rose and set. This conflict, which the French sought to bring about and New England wished to avoid, may be set down, therefore, as the beginning of the end.

The long series of hostilities, of which we are now at the beginning, should not be regarded, therefore, as so many hap-hazard blows struck in the dark, but as an issue to be fought out to the bitter end, or until one or the other adversary surrendered at discretion.

Count Frontenac, the man on whose shoulders Louis had twice put the burden of saving Canada, was beyond question without his equal as a commander in all the colonies. Though now seventy, he was to all appearance as vigorous in mind and body as ever. To a military training in the best schools of Europe he added the genius of audacity—the quick and brilliant conceptions which mark the great soldier. It was this rare quality which made him by far the most dangerous enemy that New England ever had. None knew better than he the advantage of carrying the war into the enemy's country, or of striking a disabling blow when your adversary least expects it; and while the English thought that winter, with its rigors, had put a stop to warlike movements, Frontenac was raising war-parties to distress them to the utmost. In a few short years he could say, as his master said of the Pyrenees, "there is no longer a wilderness."

By furnishing a few ambitious French officers to lead his war-parties, composed mainly of savages, Frontenac

mac  
to g  
scer  
they  
libe  
mur  
plac

injur  
his e  
his e  
indis  
the s

<sup>1</sup> It is  
quois in  
of civil

made the most of his means, without exposing himself to great loss, besides, in a manner, dignifying these descents with a character they were far from deserving, as they were neither more, nor less than deliberately planned raids for robbery and murder. We cannot, therefore, in conscience find a place of honor for such deeds, although narrating their

Make up of  
war-parties.



SAMUEL SEWALL.

injurious effects. Frontenac thought much of crippling his enemies, but cared little for the means; and it is to his eternal disgrace that he inaugurated the policy of indiscriminate massacre, which put him on a level with the savages he employed.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is claimed that this was done in retaliation for outrages committed by the Iroquois in Canada. But the Iroquois also were savages, neither governed by the rules of civilized war, nor led by English officers.

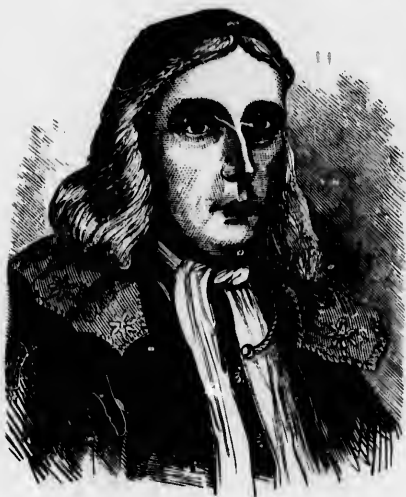
Frontenac had planned three expeditions, one against Schenectady, and two against New England. It was in the heart of winter, when nobody dreamed of an outbreak, that the three war-parties set out on their errand of destruction. In February, news of the atrocious massacres at Schenectady sent a thrill of horror throughout the colonies, and served to put the exposed eastern settlements somewhat on their guard.

Weak defensive line.

But this line was much too long and too thin not to be easily broken through, as it consisted of villages situated ten, twenty, and thirty miles apart, connected only by occasional patrols. The horsemen were of course compelled to keep to the few highways, which were easily avoided, while the footmen, who ranged

the woods looking for fresh tracks of an enemy, often had to force their way through swamps and thickets where the foot of man had never trod before.

The venerable Samuel Sewall relates that he was present at a "treat" or social gathering in Boston when the news of the shocking calamity at Schenectady came to cast its withering blight over the spirits of all the company. It was a premonition of the coming storm which cast its dark shadow before. It was a season of gloomy foreboding.



LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR STOUGHTON.

+

" M  
thi  
pre  
ing

T  
tion

fifty  
Can  
and

wer  
snow  
the

Fran  
com  
hood

chie  
ages

O  
Mar  
vade

wood  
Falls  
situa

from  
a par  
the f

sites  
the ri  
proac

met t  
nately

1 HERT  
vier, Seig  
Rivières.

"Mr. Danforth looks very sorrowfully. Mr. Stoughton thinks best to prosecute vigorously," are simple words, pregnant with meaning.

The second expedition, numbering only fifty-two men, one half Canadian bushrangers, and one half savages, were toiling on through snow and ice toward the New England coast. François Hertel was in command, with Hopehood, a Norridgewock chief, to direct the savages.<sup>1</sup>

On the 27th of March, 1690, the invaders came out of the woods near Salmon Falls, a little village situated on the west bank of the stream dividing Maine from New Hampshire. Like Dover, of which it was then a part, Salmon Falls had grown up around the falls, which furnished excellent mill-sites; and lumber was here cut, sawed, and rafted down the river for shipment abroad. At the time Hertel approached it a more dismal landscape could scarcely have met the eye, for in that bleak season winter still obstinately disputes the advance of spring.

<sup>1</sup> HERTEL had with him three of his sons and two nephews, namely, the Sieur Crevier, Seigneur of St. Francis and the Sieur Gatineau. His party set out from Trois Rivières.



CANADIAN SNOWSHOE RANGER.

Salmon  
Falls.

Upon reconnoitring, Hertel's scouts found no watch kept. The advantage of coming on the place by surprise decided Hertel to attack, small as his force was. At daybreak, therefore, having previously divided it into three parties, the assault began on the three garrison-houses, placed to cover the rest of the village.

Though taken by surprise, the garrisons were stoutly defended, but in the end were forced to surrender one after another. After this success the enemy made short work of the undefended farmhouses and mills, first plundering, then burning them, with the barns and their contents, live stock included. **Hertel destroys it.** Every species of property was swept away. Thirty of the bravest inhabitants were killed, and fifty-four made prisoners, chiefly women and children. No place could have been more thoroughly laid desolate.<sup>1</sup>

Upon an alarm that the English were coming to attack him, Hertel began his retreat. He was pursued by a hundred and forty men, hastily collected from the nearest towns, who came up with him at Wooster River, in **Combat at Wooster River.** Berwick, where the stream was crossed by a narrow bridge. Hertel halted his men on the farther side, faced about, and succeeded in keeping his eager pursuers back until darkness put an end to the combat.

Both sides lost a few men, the English suffering the most, as they were the assailants. They gave up the pursuit here, and Hertel continued his retreat.

Hertel now struck across the country to the Kennebec. Upon reaching it he learned that Frontenac's second war-party, reinforced from the Kennebec villages, and

<sup>1</sup> *Massachusetts Archives*. Sewall's account was obtained from a "Frenchman, taken while making up his pack."

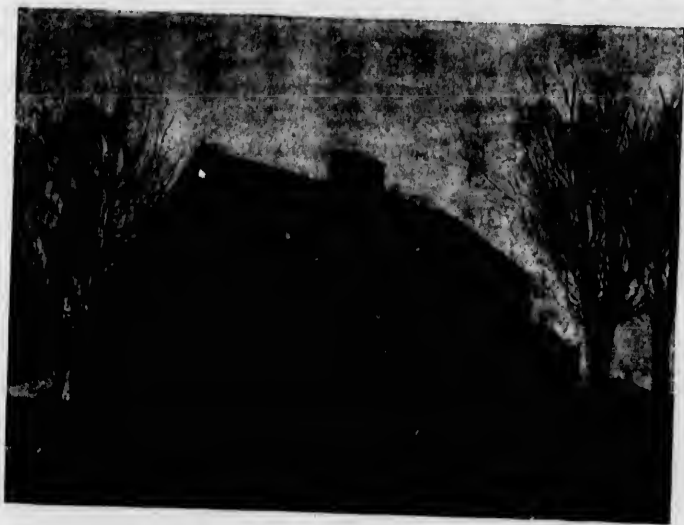
by  
pas  
att  
vill  
add  
dre

ed b  
do,  
form  
raud

<sup>1</sup> THE  
comma  
danger  
fires on  
one of  
also had  
"Coun

<sup>2</sup> THE

by St. Castin and his warriors from the Penobscot, had passed down the river shortly before, on their way to attack Casco.<sup>1</sup> Leaving his wounded at the Abenaki village, Hertel set out to join the others, who, with this addition to their force, mustered from four to five hundred men. Portneuf<sup>2</sup> was the commander, ably second-



WENTWORTH GARRISON, SALMON FALLS, N. H.

ed by Courtemanche, Hertel, St. Castin, Madockawando, Hopehood, the two Doneys, and others—a truly formidable array of the most crafty and relentless marauders ever sent out on the war-path.

<sup>1</sup> THE garrison was not without warning of this. Captain Willard, who was then in command, wrote, April 9, 1690, to the authorities at Boston, giving an account of the danger they were in, thirty Indian canoes having been seen in the bay, besides several fires on the shore. This was six weeks before the assault took place, and shows that one of the enemy's detachments was waiting for the others to join it. The enemy also had made a descent at Wells, April 3, burning a saw-mill and several houses there. "Council ordered 120 men sent out of Essex to their relief."—*Sewall Papers*.

<sup>2</sup> THIRD son of the Baron de Becancour.

Though only a poor village, Casco was one of the strategic points essential to be held if a foothold was to be retained in eastern Maine, the more so since the fall of Pemaquid had left Casco an outpost.

**Fort Loyal,  
Casco.**

For defence, there was Fort Loyal, a picketed enclosure, built on a low bluff at the seaside, and mounting a few light guns to command the approach as well by water as by land. A portion of the regular garrison were gone out on a scouting expedition, and Captain Sylvanus Davis, the commander at this moment, had just reported the works to be in a very bad condition.

Taking everything into account, the enemy could not have made their appearance at a worse time.

Outside the fort four garrison houses served as so many rallying points for the village, which lay in a natural depression, around the fort, with its rough clearings reaching back to the surrounding forests. Such as they were, fort and village covered but an insignificant space on the peninsula, now Portland, which, at most points, rose high above the water, and in some was even inaccessible.

At this time the number of inhabitants was somewhat increased by the fugitives who had been driven from the settlements farther east. Including this small garrison, there were, in all, about a hundred able-bodied men in the place when Portneuf came before it, on May 25, 1690. An ambuscade was quickly formed on the brow of Munjoy Hill, the lofty elevation terminating the peninsula at the northeast. All this passed without discovery.

Without doubt, Portneuf intended to throw his whole force upon the village before the unsuspecting inhabi-

1690  
tan  
at  
pri  
thin  
sec  
as  
the  
Th  
dir  
pre  
bot  
ski  
out  
in t  
sho  
ing  
the  
bus  
a n  
emy  
put  
thei  
and  
ceec  
E  
the  
but  
the  
fall,  
take  
T  
ity t

tants were stirring in the morning, as Hertel had done at Salmon Falls. The terror and confusion of a surprise would do the rest. But this purpose was frustrated through the eagerness of some of his outlying Indian scouts, who waylaid and shot Robert Greason, a settler, as he was passing toward the village. They then raised their scalp halloa. This put the English on the alert. Thirty of them immediately started off on a scout in the direction of the firing. Mounting the hillside, they pressed on across the clearings, into a lane, fenced at both sides, which led to a block-house,<sup>1</sup> standing at the skirt of the woods. It was noticed that the cattle, turned out to pasture, instead of quietly grazing were all staring in the same direction, a sure sign that all was not as it should be. Instead, however, of acting upon the warning thus plainly given them by these dumb sentinels, the impetuous assailants dashed headlong into the ambush; and, while penned up in the lane, they received a murderous volley, almost at the muzzles of the enemy's guns, which brought thirteen to the ground and put the rest in disorder. The enemy then sprang from their coverts, behind the fences, and fell with swords and hatchets upon the survivors, only four of whom succeeded in regaining the fort, and they were wounded.

Elated by this success, the invaders then rushed into the village. The undefended houses were easily carried, but the assailants met with such a rough reception at the garrisons that they were obliged to draw off at nightfall, and Portneuf even began to doubt his ability to take the fort.

The English, however, were convinced of their inability to withstand another onset. The loss of so many of

<sup>1</sup> This block-house was evidently left unguarded.



their best men thus early in the fight had seriously crippled them. Under cover of the darkness those in the garrisons therefore quietly withdrew to the fort. In the morning, finding the village deserted, the enemy first plundered and then burned it. Having carried the outworks, they then advanced to attack the fort. In reconnoitring it a deep gully was found running within fifty yards of the stockade, in which the besiegers, completely sheltered from the fire of the fort, could inflict considerable loss on the garrison. Its fire was, however, too hot to venture upon a direct assault. Portneuf, therefore, set his men to work digging a trench up to the palisade, with tools found in sacking the village. Meantime firing was kept up on both sides night and day. That from the fort, however, did not prevent the work of zig-zagging toward the stockade from being pushed rapidly forward; and, though wholly unused to this species of warfare, both French and Indians labored so industriously with pick and shovel that on the third day the besiegers were close under the palisade. Portneuf then summoned Davis to surrender. Davis, expecting the return of his detachment, demanded a truce of six days. This being refused, fighting was resumed. The besiegers could now throw hand grenades over the stockade into the fort, while their fire, kept up under cover of the trenches, grew more and more destructive. As the end drew near they grew more bold. A barrel of tar, with other combustibles, was pushed up against the stockade in readiness for firing.

Seeing the moment of assault at hand, and fearing to risk its result, Davis hoisted the white flag. Up to this time he supposed he had to do only with savages. Knowing them to be utterly faithless, he demanded to

kn  
an  
th  
th  
wo  
all  
nis  
Da  
ma  
Go

pro  
the  
un  
tre  
an  
sol  
the  
to  
un

I  
ery  
sca  
sigh  
ing  
had  
for

T  
dep  
far  
they

I N  
of pri

know if there were any Frenchmen among them. Being answered in the affirmative, he insisted on treating for the surrender of the fort with them only. He stipulated that all within the fort, men, women, or children, well or wounded, should have good quarter, be The fort is taken. allowed to depart unharmed, and be furnished with a safeguard as far as the next English town. Davis would not be satisfied, he says, until, at his demand, the French officers swore "by the ever living God" to fulfil these conditions to the letter.

All were shamefully violated. Instead of finding the promised protection the survivors were abandoned to the fury of the Indians, who wreaked their vengeance unchecked.<sup>1</sup> Davis's indignant remonstrances were treated with derision. He was told that he was a rebel and traitor to his king, as if that fact, were it true, absolved his captors from all pledges. After plundering the fort the invaders set it on fire, and it was soon burned to the ground, leaving Casco untenanted, save by the unburied bodies of the slain.

French accounts make no mention of this act of treachery. Charlevoix adds, however, that the place was scarcely evacuated when four English vessels hove in sight, bringing a reinforcement for the garrison. Seeing no flag flying, those on board understood that they had come too late, and after waiting some time in vain for a signal from the shore they stood off to sea again.

The loss of this post threatened to lead to the total depopulation of Maine. As it was, all the garrisons as far as Wells withdrew in a panic to that place, where they were hastily reinforced and ordered to make a

<sup>1</sup> No very clear estimate of the losses is attainable. Charlevoix puts the number of prisoners at seventy, without counting women or children.

stand.<sup>1</sup> This left the savages free to overrun the New Hampshire border undisturbed. A war-party, under Hopehood, fell upon Fox Point in Newington, slew Fox Point, N. H., fourteen persons, carried off six, and harried. burned several houses. They were pursued by Captains Floyd and Greenleaf, were overtaken and compelled to leave behind some of their captives and booty. Early in July eight persons were killed while mowing in a field near Lamprey River (Newmarket), and a lad taken. On the next day Hilton's garrison at Exeter was assaulted, but was saved by a timely reinforcement.<sup>2</sup> On the sixth, two companies, who were out searching for the marauders, had for some hours a severe fight with them at Wheelwright's Pond, in Lee, in which Captain Wiswall, his lieutenant, sergeant, and twelve besides, were killed, and several more wounded. Floyd, the other captain, kept up the fight some time longer, but was finally driven off the ground. The victors then went westward, leaving a bloody track as they went, no less than forty people having fallen victims to their rage in one week. Such were the immediate results of Frontenac's two war-parties.

<sup>1</sup> CAPTAIN SYLVANUS DAVIS'S *Narrative* is in *Massachusetts Historical Society Collections*, 8d Series, Vol. I. What relates to the siege is very brief. He says he told Frontenac that his war-parties were no better than robbers and cut-throats. Charlevoix, II., 52, has the fullest French account of the two descents. La Hontan adds a little, and La Potherie a little. Mather, *Magnalia*, II., 603, has the fullest English account.

<sup>2</sup> BELKNAP relates that one of the relieving party, Simon Stone, received nine gun-shot wounds and two strokes of a hatchet. When his friends came to bury him, signs of life were perceived, and by the use of restoratives the wounded man revived, to the amazement of all. See Sewall, I., 325.

New  
under  
slew  
and  
pur-  
taken  
otives  
killed  
rmar-  
gari-  
aved  
ixth,  
aud-  
n at  
wall,  
lled,  
tain,  
ally  
then  
k as  
vic-  
edi-

society  
ys he  
roats.  
ontan  
ullest

nine  
him,  
ved,

## VII

PHIPS TAKES PORT ROYAL,<sup>1</sup> BUT FAILS AT QUEBEC

May—October, 1690

UP to this time the people of New England seem to have had no thought of invading Canada themselves, or felt much fear of being invaded from there. Thus far the war, on their part, had been a purely defensive one. But it was now clear to everyone that the real struggle was not so much between the English and Indians, as between the English and French, who kept the Indians constantly supplied with the means of carrying on hostilities, while enjoying entire immunity from its ravages themselves. The relation was as close as that between the hand and the weapon. Two flourishing provinces lay at the mercy of hostile incursions, which no power could foresee or prevent. The entire depopulation of both was imminent. All this continual harrying of defenceless villages, with its ever-recurring and revolting story of captivity and massacre, was fast turning the border back into a wilderness, which, indeed, was what the enraged savages aimed at. Every attempt to reach and destroy these vigilant foemen in their own fastnesses proved worse than futile. New England was losing ten lives for one; and in property more than fifty to one.

This being so, the plan of striking at the root of the evil was wisdom itself. True, the difficulties in the way

<sup>1</sup> So named by Champlain, 1604, on account of its spacious anchorage.

of successfully assailing Canada were wellnigh insurmountable. Nature herself seemed to have set up an impassable barrier between the belligerents; but no sooner was the necessity realized, than all obstacles



PHIPS RAISING THE SUNKEN TREASURE.

vanished before that spirit of stern determination with which the New Englanders were accustomed to grapple with the most arduous undertakings.

But hostile incursions from Canada were not the only evils to be redressed with the strong hand. Injuries scarcely less vexatious had long been accumulating in

1690  
an  
tle  
bo  
an  
Ne  
no  
ma  
of  
pla  
fish  
str  
lia  
I  
ass  
Po  
gar  
sim  
from  
ble  
His  
ting  
eigh  
wid  
pro  
ind  
A  
New  
was  
was  
1 Co  
a prot  
2 U  
colony  
Phips  
him m

another quarter, where no wilderness forbade a settlement of the account. For years Acadia and its harbors had been a safe retreat for privateers and corsairs, who robbed and ill-used the New England fishermen until those seas were become no longer safe. Bad as it had been, the evil was now made tenfold worse by a state of war. For depredations of this sort Acadia, or Nova Scotia, is remarkably well placed, and as New England subsisted mostly by her fisheries the alternatives were either to see them destroyed or to put them beyond the reach of future spoliation.

Acadia a nest  
of corsairs.

Early in the spring of 1690, before Casco had been assailed, an expedition sailed from Boston to attack Port Royal, the chief seaport of Acadia, where a French garrison was kept. Sir William Phips,<sup>1</sup> a man whose simple force of character had raised him from poverty to affluence, and from an humble ship-carpenter to Knighthood, was put in command. His popularity, no doubt, contributed much toward setting the little squadron of eight vessels and seven or eight hundred men afloat; but his appointment was a wide departure from the traditions of the colony and province, where social rank had always been considered indispensable to high command.<sup>2</sup>

Sir William  
Phips.

As this was the first venture of the kind in which New England had ever engaged, the result was awaited in painful suspense. Phips was, however, completely successful. Port Royal sub-

Port Royal  
taken.

<sup>1</sup> CONSULT Mather's and Bowen's biographies. Mather is too laudatory. Phips was a protégé of the two Mathers.

<sup>2</sup> UP to this time Sir William does not seem to have been even a freeman of the colony, by the following entry in Sewall's *Dairy*, viz.: "Saturday, March 22, 1690.—Phips appointed to command the forces. Court makes Sir William free and swears him major-general."

mitted, and his reputation as a commander was made at once.<sup>1</sup>

No doubt was now felt that, with a little greater effort, Quebec and Montreal could be taken with all ease. Phips himself seems to have been of this opinion. Nor was it ill-founded. As a matter of fact, Quebec had

**Plan to take Quebec.** been taken before, and it was not unreasonable to suppose that it might be taken again. The concurrence of Connecticut and New York being obtained, land forces were raised to attack Montreal by way of Lake Champlain,<sup>2</sup> while Phips, with a fleet, should be thundering away at Quebec.

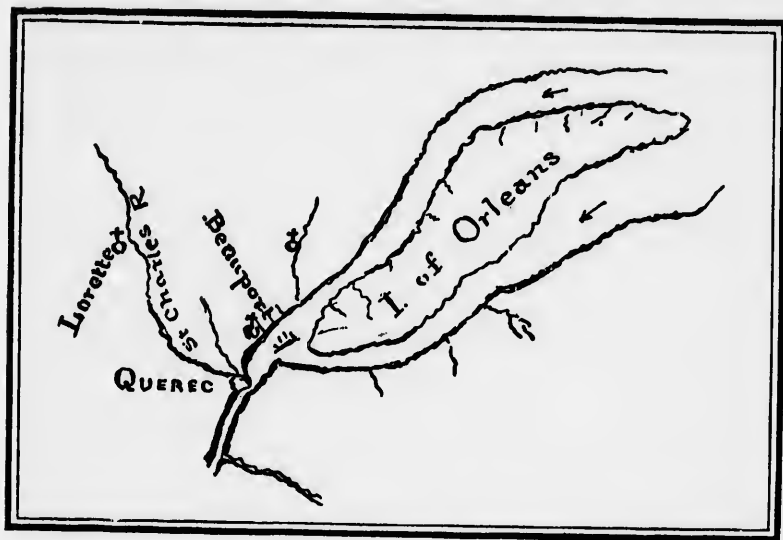
It was a good plan and well deserved success—the self-same plan, in fact, by which the conquest of Canada was achieved seventy years later. By assailing two points at once the chances of success were greatly improved.<sup>3</sup> But the army got no farther than the head of Lake Champlain, leaving Phips to fight it out alone at Quebec, where he was repulsed, as a matter of course;

<sup>1</sup> MENEVAL, commander of Port Royal, charged Phips with violating the capitulation, and even with robbing him of his own money. A violent scene took place at a hearing before the Massachusetts Council, in the course of which Sewall, who was present, says that "very fierce words" passed between Sir William and Mr. (John) Nelson, who took Meneval's part.

<sup>2</sup> FITZ JOHN WINTHROP, who had served under Cromwell in England, was put in command.

<sup>3</sup> At a congress of delegates held at New York, early in May, it was agreed that New York should raise four hundred men and the New England colonies three hundred and fifty-five, to which the Iroquois were expected to add the whole fighting strength of their confederacy. Only a few Mohawks and Oneidas joined the expedition, however, the more western tribes failing to appear. Of the white forces New York and Connecticut alone furnished their contingents, Massachusetts and Plymouth having their hands full in defending their frontiers. See *Journal of Major General Winthrop*, N. Y. Col. Docs., IV., 193; *Sewall Papers*, I., 327, etc. News that the Montreal troops were returning from Wood Creek, to which point they had marched, came to Boston, August 28, during a Public Fast, eliminating, of course, all hope of ultimate success. *Ibid.* Captain John Schuyler, with a detachment of New York volunteers and Indians, made a bold dash to La Prairie, opposite Montreal, inflicting some loss upon the enemy.

for as soon as Frontenac found that Montreal was in no danger he hurried off to Quebec with every available man and musket. Instead of a garrison weakly manned, Phips really had to contend with the whole strength of the colony, led by a soldier every way his superior in military knowledge and capacity. Quebec, too, had been made



SKETCH MAP, APPROACHES TO QUEBEC.

very strong. But this fact did not become known until it was too late to draw back.

Owing to various delays the fleet did not get in sight of Quebec until the 5th of October, when, if anything was to be done, it was necessary to act promptly, as the season for active campaigning was drawing to a close. The fleet consisted of **Phips's fleet and army.** thirty-two sail, scraped together for this expedition, the largest carrying forty-four guns, some a few only, and



the greater part none at all, being mere transports.<sup>1</sup> Twenty-three hundred men were embarked.<sup>2</sup>

On the 6th, however, Phips summoned Frontenac to surrender in terms which the old soldier hotly resented; and, in view of the means at his disposal for enforcing the demand, it must be admitted that Phips's language was sufficiently offensive. But Frontenac was not to be browbeaten into surrendering. He flew into a towering passion, called the English rebels and traitors to their lawful sovereign, and threatened the envoy, but finally calmed down sufficiently to return Phips the dignified and soldierly answer, "Tell him who sent you to do his best, and I will do mine." To Phips the challenge could scarcely have been encouraging. From his anchorage in the basin below, the huge, rock-ribbed promontory of

**Quebec as it  
looked to Phips.**

Quebec towered defiant in the distance. Its front, thrust boldly out into the St. Lawrence, was a precipice. Whichever way the eye wandered no vantage ground offered itself in this direction. Toward the country, however, the land fell off to a lower level, showing the besiegers a line of lesser heights, down which the road from the town led to a stretch of meadow land bordering the river St. Charles, crossed this at the usual fording place, practicable only at low tide, and passed on to Beauport, where the shipping lay.

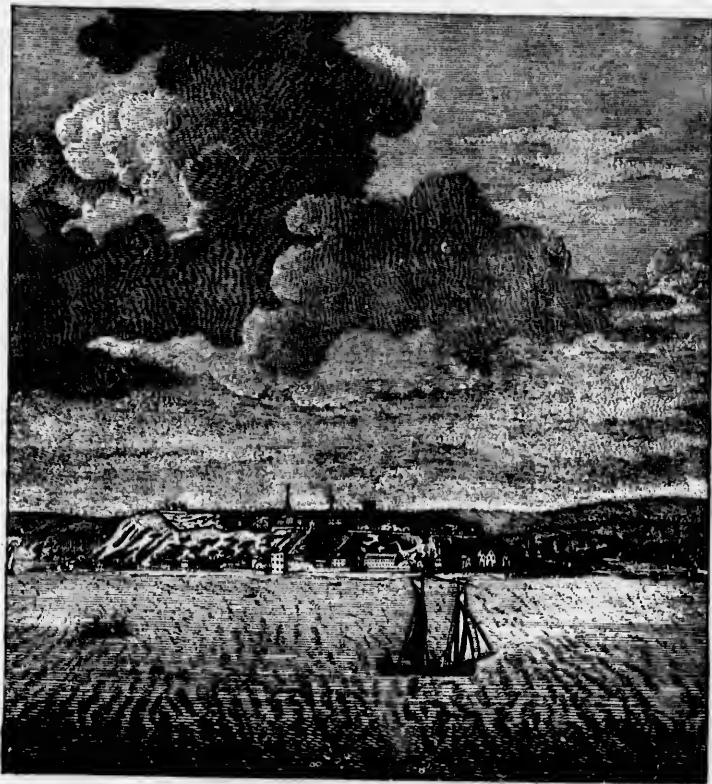
A morass, a ford, a steep ascent thus separated the combatants in this quarter. Yet this, as Frontenac well knew, was the one assailable side of Quebec, and he had accordingly made up his mind not to risk a general engagement beyond the St. Charles, as Montcalm afterward did, but to let the English

**Plan of defense.**

<sup>1</sup> FOUR ships of war and twenty-eight others.—Sewall.

<sup>2</sup> WAIT WINTHROP to his son John.

themselves cross the river, and attack him in his defences, thus taking the fullest advantage of all the natural obstacles in the way of their advance or retreat.



QUEBEC, FROM AN OLD PRINT.

Such, in brief, was the position which Phips had come so far to take, and Frontenac had labored night and day to strengthen. Without making a careful reconnoissance in advance, misled by the out-of-date report that

it was not half fortified, and but weakly defended, Phips nevertheless, born fighter that he was, saw only his enemy within his reach at last.

The land forces, upon whom the brunt of the assault must fall, had now been cooped up for a month on ship-board, without any opportunity whatever of getting together for drill or discipline. All were raw militia. They were commanded by Major John Walley, a respectable civilian, who was yet to fight his first battle. The small-pox had broken out at sea; and, from one cause or another, so many had fallen sick that of the 2,300 who had embarked at Boston, probably a third part were wholly unfit for active duty. The rest, however, showed no lack of spirit when called upon to fight.

The plan agreed upon embraced an assault upon the town, in the rear, while the fleet was cannonading it in front. But the troops were first to gain the desired position by crossing the St. Charles and storming the heights of St. Genevieve beyond; then, when the greater part of the garrison should be drawn off to repulse this

**Plan of attack.** assault, Phips was to open his batteries upon the town. If the enemy showed weakness here, Phips himself was to attempt a landing at the Lower Town. Little fault can be found with this plan, but much with the way in which it was carried out.

Two days went by. The 6th passed, as we have seen, in fruitless negotiation. The 7th proved too stormy to attempt a landing. On the 8th, however, about 1,300

**The troops land.** men were set on shore, abreast of the fleet, some four miles below the town, most of them wading through water knee deep from where the boats grounded on the flats. "Never were more men landed in less time," declares Walley.

The troops had scarcely begun their march toward the town when they were fired upon from every copse and thicket by the enemy's out-parties, who hung, like swarms of angry bees, around the invaders, disputing their advance from cover to cover, until routed by a final charge, when they broke away and re-crossed the river to the town, and at **Reach the St. Charles.** dark the New Englanders encamped for the night on the banks of the St. Charles. This opening affair had cost them four killed and sixty wounded. Considering that the ground had not been reconnoitred at all, it was by no means discreditable to Walley's raw levies.

That evening a deserter came into camp, bringing the unwelcome news of the garrison's being heavily reinforced from Montreal. This piece of news seems to have taken all the fight out of Walley, who now found twenty reasons for not advancing a step farther. And he was still further disconcerted at seeing Phips weigh anchor to attack the town, before the troops were in position to co-operate with him.

Whether this manœuvre was intended to draw attention from Walley, and thus facilitate his crossing the St. Charles, is uncertain. Walley says that the boats promised him for this purpose failed to appear; and furthermore, that a battery of eight guns, with a thousand men in support of it, was waiting for him on the opposite shore.

Be that as it may, toward evening, the four heaviest ships moved up before the town, and were soon hotly engaged with the enemy's batteries. Night **Phips cannon-** put an end to the conflict. It was resumed **ades.** in the morning, with the result, that, after being badly cut up in their hulls and rigging, without doing seri-

ous damage to the enemy, the ships were obliged to drop down, out of the fire, leaving the troops without support. During the cannonade, they had remained mere idle lookers-on, and, now, that it had failed, Walley shrank from making the assault alone. After holding his ground until the 10th, he appealed to Sir William to withdraw the troops, and as Phips now realized that he **Phips is beaten off.** was beaten, orders were given to bring them off without loss of time. This was effected on the night of the 11th.

Phips now thought only of getting away from Quebec as soon as possible. Before sailing, there was an exchange of prisoners,<sup>1</sup> by which Captain Davis and two daughters of Lieutenant Clark, taken at Casco, and little Sarah Gerrish, carried off from Dover, were released from captivity.

On the return voyage, the same ill fortune continued to pursue Phips and his defeated squadron. One vessel suffered shipwreck on the Island of Anticosti,<sup>2</sup> two or more were sunk, and several blown off to the West Indies.<sup>3</sup> One by one they came dropping into the port they had left with such full expectation of an easy victory. Now all was changed. No such terrible humiliation had ever before visited New England. Yet, alone and single-handed, she had struck the blow which was to be the key-note of future operations against Canada ;

<sup>1</sup> ON his way up the river Phips had taken several prisoners, among whom was the wife of the explorer, Jollet.

<sup>2</sup> "JUNE 29, 1691 : Yesterday Rainsford arrived with 17 men that remained alive on Anticosti ; 4 dead of the small-pox since the long boat's coming."—*Sewall Papers*.

<sup>3</sup> "FRIDAY, Nov. 8, 1690 : Between 9 and 10 at night, governor sends to me and enforms of the defeat at Canada. Shute comes into Boston that night or next morning ; hath thrown overboard more than sixty persons since his going hence, most Indians of Plymouth. Town much filled with the discourse and some cast blame on Major Walley."—*Sewall Papers*, I., 332.

and if, in this instance, it had not proved successful, if the means and the leadership had savored somewhat of inexperience, and yet more of over-confidence, the lesson, costly as it proved, was not thrown away. Present failure only pointed the way to ultimate success.

The impoverished people were, however, at the end of their resources.<sup>1</sup> For the present they could see nothing but their overwhelming defeat. The returning soldiers were loudly clamoring for their pay, and there was no money to pay them with. In this extremity, Massachusetts was forced to resort to the expedient of issuing paper money to defray the expenses of the expedition, which, it had been confidently hoped, would be met by the spoil of First paper  
money. Quebec. And here was first opened the door to those financial difficulties which ever after proved so vexatious and so lasting in their effects.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> PENHALLOW puts the cost of this expedition at £140,000 in money, besides the lives of several hundred men.

<sup>2</sup> THE leading authorities on this expedition are Walley's *Journal*, in Hutchinson, vol. 1, *Appendix*; *Diary of Sylvanus Davis* in *Mass. Hist. Coll.*, 3, 1, 101; *Savage, Account of the Late Action*, etc. (London, 1691); Winthrop, *Journal in N. Y. Col. Docs.*, IV., 198; *Public Occurrences* (Boston, September 25, 1690). The French accounts of Charlevoix, La Hontan and La Potherie, furnish details not given elsewhere. Charlevoix should be read for its detail of the land operations; La Hontan for the incident of the summons.

## VIII

### CHURCH'S SECOND EXPEDITION

September, 1690-1691

WHILE Phips was on his way to Quebec, the Massachusetts authorities deemed the opportunity a fitting one to chastise the hostile tribes who had desolated the Maine border in the previous spring, now that the French could afford them no aid. For this purpose Major Church was again called into the service. It required considerable persuasion to induce the old ranger again to take the field, for he was still smarting under the censures his previous expedition had called forth; but he was at length prevailed upon to lay aside his personal grievances and accept the command. Many of his old soldiers, Indians included, immediately enlisted under him. In all, three hundred men were raised, with whom Church was expected to give a good account of himself.

It has already been explained why the rivers emptying upon the Maine coast were so many points of danger from hostile inroads. At safe distances up these rivers, varying from sixty to a hundred miles, the tribes who usually acted together against the English had permanent villages, whence war-parties could easily slip down unperceived to the coast, join their forces at some point mutually agreed upon, and fall upon such settlements as had been marked for destruction. Small

169

an  
riv  
Sc  
en  
the

wa  
Ar  
rea  
Ma  
ing  
mi  
pri  
his  
flec  
the  
sho  
dir  
wer  
the  
say  
dec  
rela  
frie  
who  
War  
ued  
his  
that

<sup>1</sup> Bu  
<sup>2</sup> M  
Barnes  
and al  
<sup>3</sup> Ch

and insufficient garrisons posted at the mouths of these rivers had utterly failed to put a stop to these inroads. Scouting the border could not do it. To destroy the enemy's villages was the only alternative. Root out the nests and the vultures would fly away.

Church arrived in Casco Bay on September 11th. He was ordered to first strike the Indian villages on the Androscoggin, which the high water had prevented his reaching in the preceding year. Landing, as before, at Maquoit, he first marched up to Pejepscot Fort.<sup>1</sup> Finding this abandoned, he kept on some forty miles higher up the river, to the enemy's principal village and fort. When within gunshot of it, his advance was discovered. What few men were there fled away in a panic, leaving the women and children to their fate. Church says that some three or four were shot while attempting to swim the river. Among the dirt and filth of the wigwams five English captives were found in a most pitiable plight.<sup>2</sup> Six or seven of the Indian prisoners were inhumanly butchered, Church says, as an example to the rest.<sup>3</sup> Two old women, too decrepit to bear the fatigues of a march, were spared to relate the story of the descent and slaughter to their friends. In his usual boastful vein Church told them who he was, what great things he had done in Philip's War, and what their tribe might expect if they continued to make war upon the English. Then, softening his tone somewhat, he bade the hags tell their warriors that, if they wanted to see their wives again, they must

Church  
at Pejepscot.

<sup>1</sup> BUILT and abandoned by the English.

<sup>2</sup> MRS. ROBERT HUCKINS, taken at Durham the preceding August; Mrs. Benjamin Barnard, of Salmon Falls; Ann Heard, of Dover; one Willis's daughter, of Durham, and also a boy of Durham.—Church's *Letter*, September 30, 1690.

<sup>3</sup> CHURCH'S *Entertaining History*.



bring in all their English captives to Berwick within fourteen days.

Nine women and children of the chiefs Kankamagus and Worombo were brought off as pledges for the good behavior of the tribe in future; for Church well knew that so long as they were in his power these chiefs would remain quiet.

From questions put to the only man taken there, whose life was spared at the earnest entreaty of Mrs. Huckins, Church learned that most of the warriors had gone over to the Saco River to collect provisions there for an expedition they had planned in concert with the Bay of Fundy Indians. Acting upon this information, he resolved to follow them without delay. After burning the fort, with its stores of corn, laid up for the winter, Church therefore marched back to his vessels, with his prisoners and booty.

He was here joined by young Anthony Brackett, who had been taken at Casco, but had made his escape upon hearing of Church's being up the river. Brackett's thorough knowledge of the localities proved of much use in Church's future operations.

Church now sailed round into Saco River, where some of the enemy were discovered making fish. His scouts killed two of them, and rescued Thomas Baker, an English captive, who told Church where these Indians had hid away their beaver at Pejepscot. Retracing his course, that place was re-visited, and the plunder secured, but no Indians were seen. Some of Church's men now demanded that he should return home. Church demurred, but was overruled by his council, and after recrossing Casco Bay, the vessels cast anchor at Purpooduc Point, on Cape

Sails back  
to Saco.

Elis  
to  
bee  
got  
kne  
mo  
fur  
dri  
nur  
Ch  
wer  
wre  
ty-  
S  
ma  
We  
Sac  
Sin  
scat  
scot  
26th  
awa  
A  
clos  
cog  
cam  
Elis  
tenc  
that  
that  
no  
whe

Elizabeth, for the night. Three companies were allowed to encamp on shore. The Indians whom Church had been chasing about, but had never overtaken, had now got together in considerable force, and, unknown to him, were watching his every movement. Finding a careless watch kept, they fell furiously upon the camp, at daybreak, and had nearly driven the English into the sea, before a sufficient number could be rallied to make head against them. Church hastened to their assistance. The assailants were then charged and routed in their turn. In this wretched affair the English had seven killed and twenty-four wounded.

Surprised at  
Cape Elizabeth.

Standing off from here to the westward, Church next made a landing at Cape Neddock, marched thence to Wells, and sent out scouts as far back to the eastward as Saco Falls<sup>1</sup> and Winter Harbor.<sup>2</sup> No enemy was found. Since striking their blow at Purpooduc, the Indians had scattered to the woods again. Having called in his scouts, Church returned to Portsmouth on September 26th, to brood over the cool reception that he knew awaited him at home.

As Church had foreseen, one good result followed close upon his capture of the Indian women at Androcoggin fort. In October several of the chief sachems came to Wells, where they held a talk with Captain Elisha Andros, under a flag of truce. With real or pretended sincerity—it is hard to say which—they declared that the French had made fools of them, that they would fight against the English no more; and that they were ready to make a treaty whenever the English were. A meeting was soon ar-

A truce  
agreed to.

<sup>1</sup> Biddeford.

<sup>2</sup> Biddeford Pool.

ranged for, which took place at Sagadahoc, November 23d. By that time it is evident that the hostile Abenakis had heard of the repulse of Phips at Quebec, and, under French influences, were wavering or scheming to gain time, for they brought in only ten captives of the large number in their hands, and after prolonging the talk for six days, finally agreed only to a truce until the following May, at which time they promised to deliver the rest of their captives and conclude a lasting peace. We shall see how this promise was kept.<sup>1</sup>

No Indians appeared at the appointed time, though the English commissioners were on the spot, ready to proceed with the treaty. This keeping aloof from the rendezvous was of sinister omen, and forewarned another outbreak. Breathing time, however, had been gained, which was much to a people worn down and dispirited by the last year's reverses.

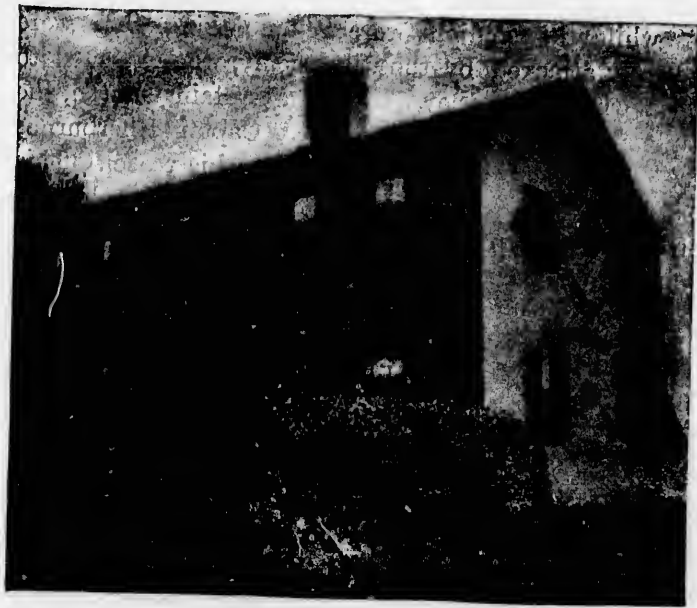
It proved, however, a mere lull in the storm. When questioned, the neighboring Indians pretended ignorance of the time fixed for the treaty. A further delay was granted. This also proved a blind. Convinced, at last, that the subtle enemy would soon be upon them again, the commissioners hastened homeward, promising to send reinforcements to Wells forthwith.

It was in June, 1691, that Captain James Converse was posted in Storer's garrison,<sup>2</sup> at Wells, with some thirty-five or forty soldiers, part of whom had but just joined him, when the chief, Moxus, assaulted it at the

<sup>1</sup> UPON this conference see Mather's *Magnalia*, 529-553; *Collections Massachusetts Historical Society's* 3d Series, I., 104, 105; Hutchinson, I., 353. Church was annoyed at being ignored in this affair.

<sup>2</sup> THE SITE is now identified only by the angle of an old wall, built of large, unhewn stones, brought here by water, for the purpose. It was on the main road through Wells, where the house of John S. Pope stands, as I write.

head of two hundred warriors, expecting an easy conquest. The assault was bravely repulsed, and Moxus drew off, swearing to be revenged. When Madockawando heard of it he laughed heartily. "So," said the amused chief, "my brother Moxus has missed it, has he? next year I'll go myself, and have the dog Converse out of his den." Wells assaulted.



SITE OF STORER GARRISON, WELLS, ME.

Foiled in their attempt on Wells, the enraged assailants next fell upon the little fishing hamlet at Cape Neddock, five miles farther down the coast, and in York. Here they killed nine men, who were loading a vessel, set the hamlet on fire, and then disappeared as suddenly as they came. The limit of

**Murders  
at York.**

this raid was, however, to mark the starting-point of one bloodier still, before many months had passed away.

Following close upon these events, four companies of English, commanded by Captain John March, were despatched in July to the enemy's old haunts at Pejepscot. They marched up from Maquoit, and they marched back again, empty handed. No Indians had been met with; yet while the soldiers were re-embarking, they were violently attacked by the wily enemy, who expected to repeat the lesson they had given Captain Church, the September before, at Purpooduc. Captain Sherburne<sup>1</sup> was killed before he could get off to his vessel. This onslaught was excellently timed, when the vessels were left aground by the tide. As soon as they were afloat again, they hauled off, for reasons unexplained in the accounts of the affair.

Except for roving scalping-parties, who killed seven persons at Berwick, two more at Exeter, and killed or captured twenty-one more at Rye, the remainder of the year was passed in comparative quiet. As usual, the English had suffered more loss than they inflicted. But March's expedition was said to have checked a purposed descent upon the Isles of Shoals. In November Port Royal was retaken by Governor Villebon without striking a blow, there being no garrison to defend it. In gloom and darkness the old year went out and the new came in.

At Berwick  
and Rye.

<sup>1</sup> SHERBURNE was of Portsmouth, N. H.

## IX

### YORK LAID WASTE, WELLS ATTACKED

February—June, 1692

ON the morning of the 5th of February, 1692,<sup>1</sup> the village of York lay locked in the arms of winter. Since daybreak it had been snowing heavily, so that few of the inhabitants were yet stirring. At this hour nothing could be heard but the muffled roar of the waves, beating against the ice-bound coast, or the moaning of the wind, as it swept through the naked forest. All else wore its usual quiet.

Suddenly a gunshot broke the stillness. At that sound the village awoke. The startled settlers ran to their doors and windows. Out in the darkness and gloom they saw a body of armed men fronting them on every side. Some tried to escape by their front-doors. A storm of bullets drove them back. They next made for the back-doors. Death met them at the threshold. They saw themselves surrounded, entrapped. On every side the rattle of musketry, mingled with the loud yells of the assailants, drowned the voices of nature—moaning sea and rising storm. The village was surrounded and retreat cut off; and a carnival of murder was to join its horrid uproar to that of the elements.

From the brow of Mount Agamenticus, the enemy had reconnoitred the village on the afternoon before. They

<sup>1</sup> MATHER'S date of January 25 is Old Style.

had bivouacked there that night in the snow. There was no warning of their coming. Under cover of the storm some three hundred savages had stolen upon the village, like famishing wolves upon a sheepfold. They found no watch set to give the alarm, as they silently filed out of the forest into the open fields beyond. Not even a dog barked. The fresh snow deadened their stealthy footfall. Until that signal shot was fired, nobody dreamed of an enemy near.

Then the slaughter began. The savages quickly burst open the doors with their axes, killing and scalping all whom they met. As soon as one house was carried, and its inmates butchered, it was first ransacked and then set on fire; the assailants then rushing off in pursuit of new victims. In a short time the village was blazing in twenty places.

At length it would seem as if the savages themselves grew weary of bloodshed, since some four-score persons escaped the tomahawk and scalping-knife. Among them were many aged women and little children, some of whom were set at liberty when the Indians marched off. Accounts differ as to the number slain, Mather

Number of killed.	fixing it at fifty, others at from seventy-five to a hundred. Many of the slain were
----------------------	--

cremated in their own dwellings. The blow was sudden, unlooked-for, deadly. It was not supposed that the place could ever rise from its ashes again.

Among the scattered houses, stretched a mile and a half along the river, four or five had been expressly constructed as a defence for the rest. These were, therefore, termed garrisons. Their thick walls of hewn timber were bullet-proof; a row of stout pickets kept an assailant at a distance; while the inmates were firing

deliberately from a secure cover, through the loopholes. Rude as they were, these primitive fortresses proved of signal use in repelling such attacks as that just narrated.

A few resolute, or desperate, men succeeded in breaking through their assailants, and so gaining the shelter of some of the four garrisons. All were summoned to



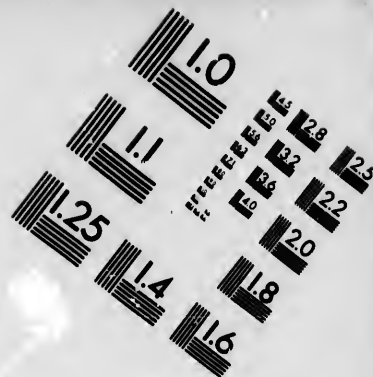
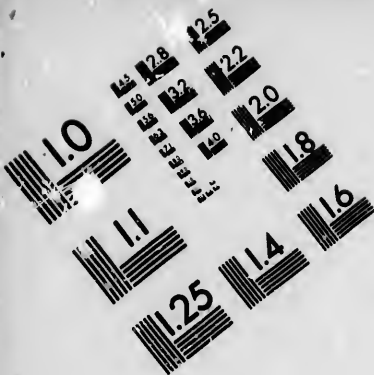
JUNKINS GARRISON, YORK.

surrender, but in every case the summons met with a stern defiance. Finding that nothing was to be had but blows, the savages drew off without venturing to make an assault. Except Alcock's, Harmon's, Norton's, and Preble's garrisons, every house in the village was burned to the ground.

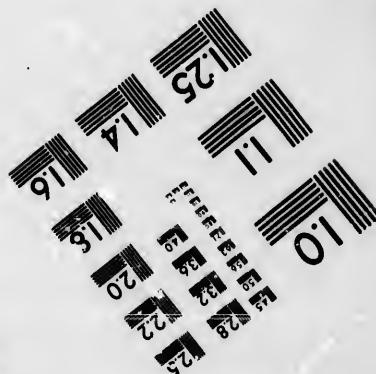
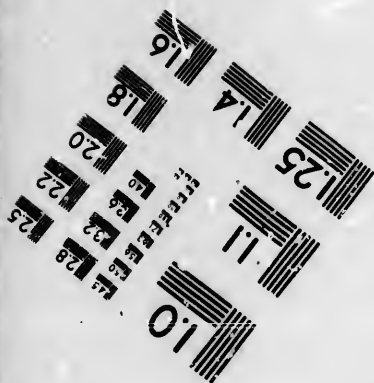
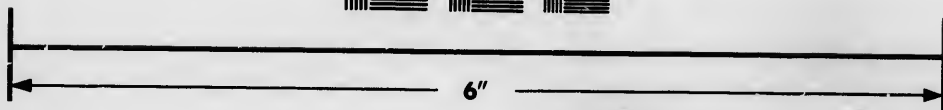
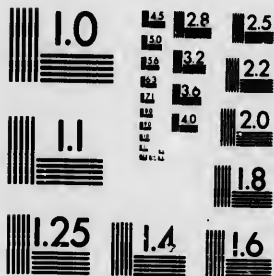
The house of Shubael Dummer, the minister, stood by the seaside, not far from Roaring Rock. He was shot down at his own door, while in the act of mounting







**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

1.0  
1.6  
1.8  
2.0  
2.2  
2.5  
2.8  
3.2  
3.6  
4.0

1.0  
1.6  
1.8  
2.0  
2.2  
2.5  
2.8  
3.2  
3.6  
4.0

his horse. His wife and son were carried off into captivity, with the rest, and Mather pithily says that one of the "bloody tygres" strutted about among the broken-hearted prisoners, wearing the clothes of the murdered man.

These Indians belonged to the missions of Father Thury at Penobscot, and Father Bigot at Norridgewock, by whom the expedition had been set on foot. Before dividing their plunder, these so-called Christian converts chanted a Te Deum for their victory. They also chanted matin and vesper service, while on their homeward march, as their spiritual fathers had strictly charged them not to omit the sacred offices of religion, if they would have success reward their undertaking.<sup>1</sup>

A boy, four years old, who escaped the massacre, afterwards grew up to lead an avenging band against this same Kennebec tribe and mission, and exterminated both.

As Wells joins York at the east, it was in a manner isolated by the crushing blow dealt that place. The people of Wells, lonely outpost of a lonely frontier, now talked of nothing but abandoning the place. To induce them to stay the garrisons were strengthened, stores collected, and the country diligently patrolled for signs of the enemy. Nothing happened, however, until June, when Madockawando made good his threat, in part, by coming at the head of four hundred warriors, as he had said he would. Moxus and Egeremet were with him, the former burning to wipe away the disgrace of his defeat; the latter as eager for English scalps as he had been ever

<sup>1</sup> UPON receipt of the news at Boston, Major Hutchinson was sent to the scene of the massacre.

since the kidnapping of his friends at Black Point, five years before.

Joined to this formidable body of savages was a small band of Canadians, commanded by Portneuf, an officer assigned to the expedition by his superiors, active in setting it on foot, skilled in border warfare, and now exercising as much authority as a horde of undisciplined savages were disposed to yield to a white man. With Portneuf Portneuf in command. were the Baron St. Castin, a gentleman by birth, and a savage from choice; also one La Brognerie, and one or two other French officers.

To oppose this army Converse could muster only fifteen soldiers of the garrison, to whom, if we should add such of the inhabitants as had sought safety within its walls, the defenders could still count themselves but a handful at best. Fortunately, however, Storer's garrison beset. two sloops, laden with stores for the garrison, had arrived on the 9th, with fourteen soldiers more, thus bringing Converse's force up to twenty-nine fighting men. To these should be added, of course, those able-bodied inhabitants who had come into the garrison, upon hearing of the enemy's approach.

This was not, however, to be a battle of numbers, but one of courage, endurance, and skill. Wells was but a small, straggling village, drawn out for a mile along the seashore it overlooked. Storer's garrison stood on the brow of a gentle rise of ground, commanding the little salt water river, or creek, that makes the harbor. At low tide there is only a thread of water left between banks of soft, sticky ooze. The two sloops were anchored off in the channel, within pistol-shot of the shore, ready to bear their part in the coming fray; and

as Converse had fully made up his mind never to yield while a man was left to fire a shot, or load a gun, the combat promised to be an obstinate one.

These preparations for defence were scarcely completed when notice was given of the enemy's presence by the cattle running in out of the woods, frightened and bleeding. The hunters of men were close at hand. That night was an anxious one for the garrison. As soon as it was light, contrary to their usual custom, the savages came swarming out of their hiding-places, screeching, brandishing their weapons aloft, and hurling shouts of defiance at the garrison as if they expected to frighten it into a surrender by a show of numbers and noise. After yelling themselves hoarse, they let fly a random volley which hurt nobody, sheltered as the besieged were behind the stockade, while their steady return fire speedily drove the too confident assailants to their coverts again.

*Enemy assault.* Failing here, the savages next turned their attention to the sloops, which promised to fall an easy prey, as they lay within short gun-shot of the shore. Lying near at hand on the bank was a pile of planks, and also a haystack. From behind these a galling fire was kept up on the vessels with musketry, and they were once and again set on fire with lighted arrows. The fire was as often put out, however, by the steadiness and coolness of the crews, who also managed, by a well-aimed shot now and then, to hold their assailants under cover. One, indeed, who rashly ventured an attempt to get on board, by shielding his body behind a slab of pine, was shot dead in his tracks. This failure, however, seems to have suggested what followed. The besiegers having found a cart some-

where, proceeded to fit it with a shield of planks in front, made bullet-proof. As many savages as it would hold then got into it, and when the tide had left the vessels aground, a score or more of their comrades began pushing their ingenious machine out toward the helpless craft, under the direction of the Converse Holds  
Out. Frenchman La Brognerie. It was thus moved some distance when it stuck fast in the soft mud of the creek. La Brognerie put his shoulder to the wheel, to lift it, when a shot fired by Captain Storer from the garrison laid him dead on the spot. Another, who took La Brognerie's place at the wheel, fell a moment later, pierced by a bullet fired from the sloop. The machine remained immovable. As the tide rose it overset, so exposing those within it to a galling fire from the sloops, by which several more lost their lives while running to cover. When night put an end to the fighting, Storer's men had everywhere more than held their own.

Throughout the night, the savages kept up a dropping fire, designed to keep the besieged on the alert, and so wear them out. They lay so near, that the firing was interspersed with harmless banterings on both sides. "Who are your commanders?" a voice in the darkness called out. The reply quickly came back, "We have a great many commanders." "You lie," retorted the first speaker, "You have none but Converse, and we'll have him, too, before morning."

In the morning the besiegers gathered together for a final and decisive assault, and at a given signal they made another blind rush for the stockade, firing their guns and yelling like so many demons let loose. Converse exhorted his men to stand firm. One man only,

intimidated by the fearful outcries around him, stammered out some words about surrendering, upon which Converse threatened him with instant death if he dared breathe that word again. A rapid discharge of musketry was kept up from the loopholes, the empty guns being passed back to the stout-hearted women of the garrison, who loaded and handed them over to their male defenders again; some even firing away at the savages as undauntedly as the men. The assailants could not long stand before so hot a fire, on open ground, and gradually broke away to cover again.

Exasperated by repeated failures, the savages next made their most dangerous attempt upon the sloops, now lying lashed together for mutual protection out in the stream. A fire-raft was hurriedly put together, the combustibles lighted, the raft shoved off from the shore and left to drift down upon the vessels with the tide. The same fatality attended this effort as the others. A puff of wind drove the blazing mass against the bank, where it burned harmlessly out.

Force having failed, the discouraged besiegers resorted to stratagem. A flag was sent to demand a surrender. Ensign Hill went out to meet it. When the message was brought to Converse, he returned for an answer, "that he wanted nothing but men to come and fight him." The wrathful envoys retorted the threat to cut the English "as small as tobacco" before morning. Converse then broke off the conference with a brusque invitation to make haste, for he wanted work. The savage, who held the flag, then dashed it to the ground in a rage, and ran off one way, while Ensign Hill ran another, each one eager to get under cover as quickly as possible. It was well for Hill that he took the alarm when he did,



for a number of shots were fired at him from an ambush, treacherously contrived by the savages, in case their demand was refused. Thanks to fleetness of foot, Hill got into the garrison unhurt.

This incident ended the siege. After putting their one captive, John Diamond, to death with excruciating tortures, the discomfited crew of white and red savages slunk silently away between dark and daylight, leaving some of their unburied dead behind them.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> CONTEMPORARY authorities for the attacks on York and Wells, are Mather's *Magnalia*; Charlevoix's, *New France*; Champligny, *Letter to the Minister*, October 5, 1692; Villebon's *Journal*; Pike's *Journal*. See also Hutchinson, *History of Massachusetts*, II.; Williamson, *History of Maine*, I.; and Bourne, *Wells and Kennebunk*, for local tradition.

## X

### REBUILDING OF PEMAQUID TO TREATY OF 1693

May, 1692—August, 1693

THUS far the war had been conducted under all the difficulties arising from an unsettled form of government. Self-preservation had, indeed, united all the people in a common effort against the common enemy. There was, however, an active undercurrent of social unrest, touching their political future, which now and again bubbled up to the surface, keeping the minds of all men in a state of dread and suspense highly injurious to interests of every sort. Since the accession of William to the throne of England the people had lived in hopes of having their old charters restored. All uncertainty was now set at rest by the arrival of Sir William Phips, with a new charter, in May, 1692.<sup>1</sup> The king, in his wisdom, had appointed Phips to be governor, not unwilling, it would seem, to set a limit to the demands of the old Puritan party, with whom it is clear that he had much less sympathy than was generally supposed. William was a deep politician. In Phips, for whose rugged honesty and personal bravery the king probably had a sincere liking, he saw an entering wedge likely to divide the

<sup>1</sup> MAY 14, 1692, "Sir William arrives on the *Nonsuch* frigate. Candles lighted before he gets into the town-house." *Sewall Papers*, I., 356. News of his being made governor reached Boston late in January.

strong republican sentiment of New England, and by that sign to conquer. For certainly William had no more sympathy with republicanism than his predecessors. It was his trade to be king.

The new charter went into effect at once. By its provisions all the old traditions were swept away with a stroke of the pen. It was in entire accord with the spirit which had brought about this sweeping political change that the new governor should himself be the obedient creature of the royal favor.

Sir William found everything in the utmost confusion. As if the calamities of war were not enough, a new and secret enemy, intangible as the air itself, yet scattering its deadly poison broadcast, so that all who breathed the infection quickly yielded to its noxious effects, was terrorizing the community beyond all belief. It was not the ignorant alone, but also the wise, the learned, and deeply pious who fell before this astonishing delusion. In February of this year The witchcraft craze. the fatal witchcraft delirium had broken out and was now at its height. The most abject, unreasoning fears were pressing heavily upon the hearts of the people. Phips feared nothing in human shape, but was ill-equipped for an encounter with demons. It is no wonder, then, that he should prefer the horrors of war to the terrors of the invisible world. Leaving, therefore, the judges and ministers of the Gospel to deal with the delusion, Sir William forthwith set himself to straightening out the military situation with his customary energy. Moreover, the state of affairs on the eastern frontiers was such as to demand immediate attention.

Realizing its importance, the king had directed the rebuilding of the fort at Pemaquid at once, first to re-

cover lost ground, next to hold the Indians in check, and lastly to reassert the English claim to so much at least of the territory in dispute between the two crowns.<sup>1</sup> It was, as Hutchinson points out, a very ill-advised measure, Pemaquid being too remote to come within any well-digested plan of defence. He might have added that its very remoteness was one of the strongest reasons for attacking it, as it could not be reinforced except by sea.

Turning a deaf ear, however, to the grumbling which the proposal met with, chiefly on account of the enormous expense, Phips at once vigorously set about the work cut out for him. He immediately summoned the ever-faithful Church to his aid, levied several hundred men with dispatch, made Church his second in command, and set sail for Pemaquid early in August. On the way there the expedition put into Falmouth, interred the remains of the dead, who had lain there unburied since the sacking of the place by Portneuf, took off the great guns, and then proceeded to its final destination. Phips's operations were greatly facilitated by the undivided authority which had passed to him by the new charter, Plymouth, Massachusetts, Maine, and Nova Scotia being now under one government.

<sup>1</sup> The fort was supposed to cover the Kennebec, Damariscotta, and some other small rivers draining the coast between the Kennebec and Penobscot. It was argued that the settlers would thus be encouraged to return to their deserted farms, and the Indians effectually kept out of those rivers for the future. But this would demand a garrison strong enough to act offensively, at need, outside the fort, instead of one so small as practically to be besieged inside of it; and it was clearly beyond the ability of Massachusetts to maintain such a garrison as the professed objects required. But the real design being political, the fortress had a certain strategic importance in the eyes of the court at a time when fortifications were the rage in Europe. For further particulars about Pemaquid consult Johnston's *Bristol, Bremen and Pemaquid; Nooks and Corners of the New England Coast; The Pine-Tree Coast*, etc.

Upon his arrival at Pemaquid, Phips immediately set part of his force to work building the fort, while, with the rest, Church started off to harass the enemy in that quarter. Doubtless a secondary purpose was to keep them from finding out what was going on at Pemaquid. In the execution of his orders Church first looked into the Penobscot, and afterward went up the Kennebec as far as Teconnet, where the Indians set fire to their fort and fled to the woods at his approach.

Meanwhile work on the new fort was being pushed forward with the greatest vigor, and, on its completion, it was given the name of William Henry.<sup>1</sup> It was strongly built of stone, and armed with the heaviest guns then to be had—eighteen-pounders. Mather computes that above two thousand cart-loads Named of stone were used in laying up the walls. William Henry. Leaving sixty men, under Captain March, to garrison it, Phips ordered the remainder back to Boston, well satisfied with having, at last, put an iron curb upon the ambitious projects of his old enemy, Count Frontenac.

It was while the attention of every one was drawn to the eastern frontier that a series of unlooked for attacks broke out in the west again. At Lancaster, on July 18, 1692, a marauding party entered the house of Peter Joslin, while he was away at work, and butchered the whole family. When Joslin came home Lancaster he found his wife, his three children, and raided. a widow Whitcomb, who lived with him, lying in their blood, all having been tomahawked by the savages.<sup>2</sup> A similar onslaught was made on Billerica, August 1st. It

<sup>1</sup> For a description in detail see Mather's *Magnalia*, II., 536; or *Decennium Luctuosum*, p. 81.

<sup>2</sup> HARRINGTON'S *Century Sermon*.

is known that six persons here, belonging to two families, were killed at this time, the victims being Ann, the wife of Zachary Shed, and their two children, Agnes and Hannah; Joanna, the wife of Benjamin Dutton, and two of her children by a former marriage, Mary and Benoni Dunlin. The records touching this event are quite meagre, but the list of victims shows that probably not more than two houses were assaulted at this time. Brookfield also was visited, at nearly the same time, on the same murderous errand.<sup>1</sup>

**Brookfield,**  
**July 27.**

The first victims were Joseph Wolcot's wife and two daughters, who hid themselves in the bushes, but were discovered and slain, Wolcot himself escaping, with another child, to a distant garrison. The house of one Mason was entered while the family were at dinner, Mason and one or two of his children slain, and Mrs. Mason and her infant carried off. Thomas and Daniel Lawrence, two brothers, also were taken prisoners, Thomas being soon after killed for having deceived his captors with respect to the number of men in the town. Meantime a messenger had gone to Springfield for assistance. A company under Captain Colton set out in pursuit of the raiders. Mrs. Mason's infant was found knocked in the head and thrown into the bushes. Following the fresh tracks, the pursuers came upon the Indians' camp, which they had surrounded with a brush fence. The avengers of blood waited until daybreak and then fell upon the camp, killing fourteen or fifteen of the savages,<sup>2</sup> rescuing Daniel Lawrence and Mrs. Mason, putting the rest of the sav-

<sup>1</sup> THE details of this affair are narrated in Fiske's *Historical Discourse*.

<sup>2</sup> SEWALL has it five or six killed and two captives rescued, as the account first came to hand. *Papers I.*, 381.

ages to flight, and capturing some of the plunder left behind in their haste.

During these troublesome times, John Nelson, a prominent merchant of Boston, had been taken prisoner while making a trading voyage to the St. John River, and carried to Quebec.<sup>1</sup>

It chanced that, in the course of these wars, Nelson had shown some kindness to certain French prisoners of rank, and now that the fortune of war had placed him in the same situation, his former conduct was remembered to his advantage. Frontenac lodged him in the château, gave him a seat at his own table, and though keeping a strict eye on his prisoner, behaved like a generous enemy toward him.

J. Nelson  
taken.

Nelson spoke French fluently, had some knowledge of Indian dialects, was quick and observant, intelligent and penetrating. He had been in Quebec before; knew all the ins and outs of the place; had a heart to feel for the sufferings of others; and as the city was then crowded with our poor prisoners, dragged thither by the savages, Nelson humanely set himself to relieving their wants as far as lay in his power.

From such a man what was going on around him could not long remain hidden. In the first place, two ships of war arrived from France. Instead of unloading they began taking on board cannon and provisions. Then, a number of Indian chiefs were daily coming to Quebec, to receive presents and to have a talk with their French father, as Frontenac was styled by them. Among these was the Penobscot sachem, Madockawando, who was well known to Nelson.

By making good use of his eyes and ears Nelson soon

<sup>1</sup> NELSON was taken in October, 1691, with Colonel Tyng and John Alden, Jr.

learned beyond a doubt that a formidable expedition was getting ready to capture Pemaquid, the new English fortress commanding the coasts of Acadia; and afterward to ravage all the New England coast beyond.

In all probability his friends and kinsfolk were completely ignorant of the blow about to fall upon them. In the course of some talk he held with Madockawando Nelson drew enough from the wily savage to be convinced that it was meant to be the heaviest stroke that New England had ever known.

From this moment Nelson could think of nothing but how to warn his friends of their danger. His decision was quickly taken to attempt it at all risks. But how to do this seasonably, and without drawing suspicion upon himself, was a matter so beset with difficulties on every side that almost any other man would have despaired of success.

Though not restrained of his personal liberty, Nelson was closely watched by an attendant. He was not permitted to write letters. Once, indeed, this vigilant attendant, in reality a spy upon him, had surprised Nelson in the act of writing and had taken away his inkhorn. However, where there's a will there's a way; so, under the plea of illness, Nelson managed to write a letter in bed, at such odd moments as could be snatched from this constant espionage. When he heard the attendant coming he would hide his unfinished letter under the bedclothes.

His next care was to find a messenger or messengers. This was done by bribing two soldiers to desert, who succeeded in making their way first to Albany and then to Boston, thus disclosing Frontenac's favorite project in time to admit of strengthening the garrison at Pema-

Thwarts  
Frontenac.



2-1693

ition  
glish  
after-

com-  
hem.  
ando  
con-  
that

but  
sion  
w to  
pon  
very  
d of

son  
per-  
at-  
son  
way  
will  
an-  
as  
en  
in-

rs.  
he  
en  
in  
a-



JOHN NELSON.

quid; so that when the two ships-of-war did arrive before it the commander judged the place too strong to be attacked.

As this descent had been carefully planned in France, Louis was very wroth when he heard how completely it had failed, and Frontenac received a reprimand that stung him to the quick. So when Frontenac was informed of Nelson's share in thwarting his well-laid plans, as he presently was by the recapture of the two deserters, his anger was aroused against the man who had dared thus to beard him in his own stronghold. And the penalty exacted savored both of fear and revenge. These feelings were no doubt aggravated by the King's reproof for having treated Nelson with so much consideration. He was now to experience treatment of a far different nature.

Nelson was therefore shipped off to France as a state prisoner of the most dangerous character. He was first thrown into a dungeon of the Château Angoulême, where, for two years, he was allowed to see no one except the gaoler, who brought his food to the grating of his cell. He might have died there, unpitied and unknown, if a visitor, from motives of curiosity, had not one day stopped at his grating to ask if he could do anything for him. Nelson entreated that his friends in England might be informed of his situation. This was done, with the result that a demand soon came back for Nelson's release or exchange. Although the demand was ignored, it proved the means of getting Nelson transferred to the Bastille, at Paris, in which formidable fortress he was confined for two and a half years more.

After many grievous disappointments, Nelson at last

*In the  
Bastille.*

fur  
the  
kin

got leave to go over to England, on his parole, upon giving a bond in a large sum for his return. This was generously



THE BASTILLE, IN THE TIME OF LOUIS XIV.

furnished by a French gentleman. Nelson then crossed the channel to England. Upon hearing his story, the king laid his commands upon Nelson not to go back to

France. With a feeling which does him honor, Nelson disobeyed the order, recrossed the channel and gave himself up, thus redeeming his pledges. Peace being declared, Nelson was set at liberty. Broken in health, he returned to his family after an absence of ten years, during which he had dared and suffered as few men have for love of country.<sup>1</sup>

The vigorous measures inaugurated by Governor Phips brought a season of respite to the long-suffering inhabitants of the eastern frontiers. Except some minor depredations committed by small scalping parties at Oyster River,<sup>2</sup> and Quaboag,<sup>3</sup> the spring and summer of 1693 were passed in comparative quiet. Meanwhile, the indefatigable Major, Converse, with four or five hundred men, was ranging up and down the eastern country, from Piscataqua to Pemaquid, and from the coast as far up the Kennebec as Teconnet,<sup>4</sup> keeping the Indians continually on the move, and thus preventing their assembling in any force for their customary raids.

With the active entrance of the French into the war, by sea as well as by land, the old timber stockades of former times had outlived their usefulness. Forts for sea-coast defence now began to be built with the view of resisting the heavy artillery of ships of war. Pemaquid announced this new departure from the primitive

<sup>1</sup> It is uncertain just how far Nelson's information was effective in this matter. His letter, dated at Quebec, August 26th and 27th, mentions Wells, the Isles of Shoals and Piscataqua, as the places to be ravaged. News of the rebuilding of Pemaquid might not have reached him so soon, though it was undoubtedly known to Frontenac. Nelson's letter arrived at Boston about September 25th, in ample time to strengthen Pemaquid before Iberville came before it, in October. Charlevoix is positive that Nelson's agency frustrated the design. Hutchinson (Vol. II., p. 68), while quoting Charlevoix says this is a mistake. Whether the authorities saw fit to act upon it or not, in nowise lessens the value of Nelson's warning.

<sup>2</sup> DURHAM, N. H.

<sup>3</sup> BROOKFIELD, MASS.

<sup>4</sup> WATERVILLE, ME.

methods which, at need, had so easily converted a common dwelling-house into a fortress. During this summer another strong work was built in Fort at Saco Falls. Maine, near the site of Phillips's old garrison, at the falls of the Saco,<sup>1</sup> and at the head of ship navigation on this river, designed partly to cover the Saco settlements and partly as a trading-post, as a means of drawing the Indians of this region away from the French to the English interest, by furnishing them with better and cheaper goods than the French did.

Dismayed by the failure at Pemaquid, alarmed at seeing one avenue after another to the coast being steadily closed against them, of their own accord the hostile tribes now sued for peace. As the English were only too glad to meet them half way, a treaty was soon signed by some thirteen of the principal chiefs, by which they bound themselves not to commit any Peace with Indians. hostile acts for the future; but to be true and faithful subjects to the King of England. Five Indian hostages were delivered as a pledge of good faith; and to all appearances, the blessings of peace were now to blot out the ravages of war. This treaty was signed and sealed at Pemaquid, August 11, 1693, between Phips and the chief sagamores of the eastern tribes.

<sup>1</sup> It was an irregular pentagon, with a tower.—*Hutchinson*. It stood six miles from the sea, in what is now the Laconia Company's premises, in Biddeford.

## XI

### DURHAM DESTROYED

July 18, 1694

Thus, unexpectedly, the war seemed to have worn itself out. To both parties it promised a much needed season of respite. But beneath this calm, there lurked the gathering storm. In Canada, news of the treaty caused real consternation, as well it might. The French were alarmed for fear that the New England tribes would finally go over to the English, if the peace should hold, thus defeating the policy, as crafty as it was cruel, of sacrificing the miserable Abenakis to the vain hope of regaining what was clearly lost to them forever. When the weapon had grown too dull for further use, it would be cast away. But, meantime, this living barrier to Canada must not be broken down.

Instructed by their superiors, the French missionaries domesticated among the Kennebec and Penobscot tribes, now set themselves vigorously to work to break off the truce. The first step was to dispose of any lingering scruples on the score of conscience or honor; otherwise, even these rude barbarians, if left to themselves, might have hesitated. They were told that to break faith with heretics was no sin. The ground being thus prepared, an officer, named Villieu,<sup>1</sup> went about from village to village, urging these tribes

**Treaty alarms  
Canada.**

**Villieu's  
efforts.**

<sup>1</sup> COMMANDANT at Penobscot.

to dig up the hatchet again. Large presents were given them; they were flattered, feasted, and cajoled to their heart's content; old wrongs were artfully dwelt upon, until the slumbering embers of rage and hate flamed up again with tenfold fury. A generous supply of brandy did the rest.

All this time the desolated border was enjoying a season of long-wished-for repose, of thrice happy relief from that state of care and watchfulness which had made life on the border not worth living. Once, indeed, the New Hampshire settlers were on the point of abandoning the province in despair. They were now told to go about their usual vocations without fear.

It is true that some mutterings of the coming storm had led to certain precautionary measures. Permanent garrisons were now established in Amesbury, Haverhill, Billerica (including Tewksbury), Chelmsford, Dunstable, Groton and Marlborough. To prevent the desertion of the frontier, the General Court, in March, 1694, enacted a law, providing that if any person having a freehold in the towns named should desert the same, during the war, his estate should be forfeited.

But in this state of false security the midsummer of 1694 found the inhabitants of New Hampshire. Their villages were mostly widely scattered farms, growing just a little more compact toward the central part, where the bare, barn-like meeting-house stood, like a shepherd tending his flock. For families so dispersed there could be no central rallying point. Every man must defend his own home as best he might. Nothing was more easy, then, than for a numerous enemy to cut off each dwelling from its neighbor.

Villieu's arts, backed by the efforts of the mission-

aries, had prevailed. Casting the treaty to the winds, Madockawando and Moxus, of Penobscot, declared for war. Portions of the Penobscots, Norridgewocks, and Maquoits, with a sprinkling of warriors from the tribes farther east, were out on the war-path again.

The three hundred warriors, thus scraped together by Villieu, had singled out the pretty little village of Oyster River, now Durham,<sup>1</sup> N. H., for fire and slaughter. No hint of their murderous intent had reached that peaceful settlement, although some few Indians had been seen lurking in the neighborhood; but their presence had provoked no distrust, as they had disappeared without doing any mischief. These were really scouts sent on ahead to get exact information how best to assault the place.

Scattered along the high grounds were some twelve garrison-houses, enough to have sheltered all of the inhabitants, if warned in season. Most of them, however, not dreaming of danger so near, slept in their own houses, instead of going to the garrisons at night. And there being no suspicion, a loose watch was kept.

The settlement stretched out some miles along both banks of Oyster River, clustering thickest about the falls, where John Dean's saw-mill stood, with the meeting-house occupying a gentle eminence just beyond; and where also the roads, east and west, came together. The country round is pleasingly rolled about in low hills, then well wooded, rendering the approach of an enemy all the more easy.

Villieu reached the vicinity undiscovered on Tuesday evening, July 17, 1694. He halted near the falls till after dark, then divided his followers into two bands,

<sup>1</sup> FIRST forming a part of Dover.



one taking the south and the other the north side of the river, so as to make a clean sweep of the whole settlement. Bomazeen went with the Indians told off to the south side, while Captain Nathaniel put himself at the head of those on the north. The two bands then broke up into parties of eight or

Durham  
destroyed.



WOODMAN GARRISON, DURHAM, N. H.

ten each, in order to fall on as many houses as possible at once, as soon as it should be light.

Had this plan succeeded, it is probable that a much greater loss of life would have been the result.

It chanced, however, that John Dean had planned to go on a journey that morning. He had risen early and was just leaving his house, near his mill, when he was seen, fired at, and killed on the spot. The alarm was thus given before some of the assailants had reached their

designated stations, giving some families time to seek safety in flight, or to stand on their defence, as their fears or their courage prompted them.

At the signal the Indians fell with fury upon the settlement, and the butchery began.

Each house has its own sickening tale to tell. There was little or no fighting. It was all downright butchery. At each the same course was pursued. The savages surrounded it, beat down the doors, and rushed in upon the startled inmates, awakened from slumber to see a dozen painted assassins menacing them with instant death. The men were mostly tomahawked on the spot, the women, torn shrieking from their hiding-places, dragged away to endure a captivity but little better than death itself.

John Dean's death has been mentioned. His house was quickly assaulted. Mrs. Dean, with her little daughter, was seized and taken two miles up the river, where they were left in charge of an old Indian, while the captors went off to perform other exploits. The old savage, who spoke a little broken English, complained of having a bad headache, and asked Mrs. Dean what he should do for it. Seeing him have a bottle of rum, the poor woman told him to drink that and it would cure him. The savage, nothing loth, drank freely, and soon fell fast asleep. The prisoners immediately fled to the woods, where they lay hid until night, when, finding all quiet, they plucked up the courage to return home. A heap of blackened ruins was all that was left of it. The fugitives then found a canoe, in which they paddled down the river to Lieutenant Burnham's garrison, where they again found themselves among friends.

*Mrs. Dean's  
escape.*

Of course the garrisons were especially marked for destruction. Jones's was one of the first to be attacked. Awakened, just before day, by the barking of his dogs, he went out to see if the wolves were not prowling about his hog-pen. Finding nothing wrong there, he turned back to the house. Still uneasy, he climbed up into a flanker, and sat down on the wall to listen. He was hardly seated when the flash of a gun lighted up the gray twilight. Upon the impulse of the moment Jones threw himself backward, and drew his body up into a heap. The movement saved his life, as the bullet struck in the place he had just quitted. Finding the people here on their guard, the Indians drew off after firing a few shots out of spite.

Jones's  
adventure.

Adams's garrison made no resistance. Fourteen persons were killed here. Drew surrendered on the promise of having his life spared, but was immediately slain. His nine-year-old boy was then made to run the gauntlet of a double file of Indians who, at length, despatched him with their hatchets. Thomas Edgerly and his son, both wounded, made their escape by taking to their boat, and paddling off down the river. Beard's and Meader's also were abandoned, making in all five garrisons taken without firing a shot. The remaining seven resisted every assault, although one or two had narrow escapes from capture. At Burnham's,<sup>1</sup> where the gate carelessly had been left open over night, the inmates barely secured it in time to save themselves from a surprise.

Thomas Bickford saved his garrison with rare courage and address. It stood near the river, surrounded by

<sup>1</sup> THE HOUSE in which Mrs. Dean took shelter.

the usual palisade. Hearing the alarm, he sent off his family in a boat, shut his gate, took down his gun, and stood on his defence, resolved to risk his life for his homestead. Soon the house was surrounded. He was urged to surrender; then threatened. But promises and threats alike failed to bring the wary Bickford out of his fortress. His only reply was to fire at his besiegers as fast as he could load his gun, showing himself first at one loophole, then at another, always in a different hat or cap, and shouting out his orders as if there were a number of men in the garrison with him. Deceived by these artifices, the Indians withdrew to some easier conquest, leaving the brave Bickford master of the property he had so ably defended.

As each house was carried it was set on fire, until some twenty, or half the settlement, were blazing at once, over the mutilated bodies of their inmates.

While the Indians were thus rioting in fire and slaughter, Father Thury, their chaplain and father-confessor, made his way into the Puritan meeting-house, where he amused himself by writing with chalk upon the pulpit what was probably meant as a warning to all heretics to beware how they provoked the just anger of heaven in future. Unfortunately, the purport of the message is not preserved.

Having completed their bloody work as far as possible, the scattered bands now came together again at the falls, whence they presently moved off in a body to assault Woodman's garrison,<sup>1</sup> which stood a little out

<sup>1</sup> This venerable structure, built by John Woodman about 1670, was still standing a little off the Madbury road when the above was written. Within thirty days after my visit to it, nothing was left but the tall chimney-stack, it having been burned to the ground on November 9, 1896. It was one of the best preserved specimens of its

of the village on a commanding eminence overlooking the whole course of the morning's bloody work. Finding Woodman prepared to give them a warm reception, and fearing that the country people would soon rally to attack them, the assailants drew off, after hearing mass for their victory,

Woodman's  
Garrison.



RUINS OF WOODMAN GARRISON.

with their prisoners and booty. Only one man of them had been wounded, as they report.

They left Durham a shambles. Not far from a hunt-time to be found in New England. The situation is superb, overlooking the country for miles around. On a beautiful wooded knoll to the south rest the remains of seven generations of the Woodman family, from John Woodman, the earliest occupant of these grounds, in 1659, to the latest in 1802.

dred inoffensive persons had been shot down or tomahawked, in cold blood.<sup>1</sup> About thirty were led away into captivity. For six miles up and down both sides of the river the place was in a manner laid waste. Twenty dwellings were burned to the ground and many cattle wantonly killed. The survivors were aghast at the scene of desolation around them, and a great dread fell upon the country far and near.

All, however, was not yet ended. The tale of blood was to have its bloody sequel. While the enemy's main body was making good its retreat, a picked band, led by the chief Moxus, not satisfied with the carnage just committed at Durham, struck off toward the Merrimac in search of more victims. A small party first crossed the Piscataqua, where they fell upon some farm laborers who were at work in the hay fields without a guard, and killed Mrs. Ursula Cutts, widow of the late chief magistrate of New Hampshire, with three others.

Avoiding the settlements lying farther to the west, the crafty Moxus now made a large détour, crossed the Merrimac unperceived, and after making such a march as only savages out on the war-path are capable of, on the 27th of July, at daybreak, made a determined assault upon Groton, Mass., some thirty-two miles from Boston. At Lieutenant Lakin's garrison the assailants were handsomely repulsed, but in the scattered parts of the village, where the inhabitants were taken wholly unawares, twenty-two persons were killed and thirteen carried off into captivity. Of one family of Longleys, the father, mother, and

<sup>1</sup> The accounts vary between 80 and 100. Sewall gives 90 odd; Lieutenant-Governor Usher, 93; Parkman follows Villieu, who says 130. By subtracting prisoners he obtains 104 as the number slain.—*Villieu to the Minister*, September 7, 1694.

five children were slain on the spot, and three children taken captives.<sup>1</sup>

This audacious blow, struck, as it were, within reach of the most populous parts of the province, brought the dread possibilities of the war home to every man's door. Having regard to its intimidating effects, it was, from the enemy's standpoint, much the most brilliant exploit so far of which they could boast.

It is supposed that this was the same band of marauders, who, at their returning, slew three persons at Spruce Creek (Eliot), one at York, and eight more at Kittery. These murders happened between August 20th and 24th. No loss worth mentioning had been inflicted in return.

Deep exasperation followed these wanton acts, yet it was the old story told over again. Truth to say, the English, or those who had the management of civil and military affairs, seem always to have been dull in estimating the value of Indian treaties or the Indian character, and presumed too much upon pledges of no more real worth than the scratch of a bear's paw. But the Indians had dealt their blow, and were now waiting to see the result of the storm they had so unexpectedly raised.

<sup>1</sup> THE town has since caused a monument to be erected to their memory on the site of their old home. One of the surviving daughters, Lydia, was baptized in the Roman Catholic faith, in Canada. John, a boy of twelve, was ransomed, but four years of savage life had so won upon him that he had to be brought away by force. Betty, another daughter, died in captivity.

## XII

### A YEAR OF DISASTERS

1694—1696

It happened that some of the leaders in the horrid work at Durham had been recognized.<sup>1</sup> Among the number were the two Doney's,<sup>2</sup> of Saco, who had so lately put their hands to the broken treaty of Pemaquid. When the noise caused by that affair had a little subsided, Robin Doney, a most hardened wretch, and three more of his comrades, with brazen impudence, sauntered into the fort at Saco as if nothing had happened. They were immediately seized by the commanding officer's orders. In like manner, Bomazeen and two others were taken at Pemaquid and sent to Boston, where they were kept in close confinement. **Indians seized.** It is true that Bomazeen came into the fort under the protection of a flag; but his captors, in their eagerness to secure so redoubtable an enemy, were not more disposed to stick at a little deception than the Indians themselves, with whom such artifices were more often a merit than a crime. At any rate, the authorities now considered that they had obtained more substantial security than empty pledges, and the prisoners were accordingly held in close custody.

<sup>1</sup> STATEMENT of Doney's woman servant, who made her escape. *Mass. Archives.*

<sup>2</sup> SAID to have been the mongrel descendant of D'Aulnay, French governor of Acadia, whose name is so pronounced. Hutchinson, II., 81, *note.*



Meantime, in November, Sir William Phips had sailed for England in order to answer to certain charges preferred against him there of official misconduct. In his absence the conduct of affairs devolved upon Lieutenant-Governor Stoughton, who belonged to the old wing of the Puritan party, which the force of events had lately pushed somewhat into the background. While waiting for his case to be decided, Phips was seized with an illness, of which he died in February, leaving behind him the memory of a career as remarkable for its failures as for its successes, and of a personality in which the good and the bad were so mingled as to leave in doubt whether his brief rule was or was not of benefit to his country.

Phips goes to  
England.

The year 1695 was one of comparative quiet. One of those periodical epidemics, with which the Indians were now and then scourged, was again making frightful ravages among them. This kept them from going out on the war-path, and, it was thought, would dispose them to listen to overtures for a lasting peace. At any rate, the experiment was worth trying. With this view, one of the hostages was released, and sent out as a mediator to the hostile tribes.<sup>1</sup> In times past he had been one of the Apostle Eliot's converts, but had relapsed into paganism again. Through his influence two captive children were brought to Storer's garrison at Wells, on May 1st, and several more

Futile efforts  
for peace.

<sup>1</sup> SHEEPSHOOT JOHN—so called. He carried a letter from Lieutenant-Governor Stoughton, couched in rather haughty terms, in which the various tribes concerned in the late atrocities at Oyster River and Groton were commanded to deliver up not only the prisoners taken, but also the chiefs who had taken part in the descents. To these demands Asacambuit, of Norridgewock, returned a most insolent reply, strongly suggestive of the hands of the Jesuit missionary, denouncing, in unmeasured terms, the violation of the flag sent into Pemaquid and Saco, and breathing nothing but revenge.

to Pemaquid on the 20th, with the promise that the rest should be given up within twenty days, at which time they would be ready to make a treaty. Commissioners therefore met the Indian delegates at the time appointed, at Pemaquid. As a first step the return of all English captives was insisted upon. Not seeing Bomazeen or his fellow-hostages there, whom they had fully expected to get back by an exchange, man for man, the Indians believed they were being cheated, and went off in a pet.

Notice was immediately despatched to put the frontiers on their guard, and again were the poverty-stricken settlers compelled to abandon their own homes, with such little comforts as they were able to command, for the narrow limits of the garrisons, which, indeed, promised safety, if little else. This sort of life, if life it can be called, had now endured for seven years, with only short intervals of repose from the daily and hourly menace of sudden death. Little wonder, then, if a stoical indifference to danger had grown up out of the habit of always facing it or that a great many lost their lives through sheer recklessness, or worse—as the long list of casualties, occurring between July and November, sufficiently shows.

**Billerica, Saco, and Pemaquid.** At Kittery, Me., Major Hammond was taken prisoner, and carried to Canada; at Billerica<sup>1</sup> ten persons were killed, and five carried off into captivity; at Saco Fort Sergeant Haley was slain; at

<sup>1</sup> THIS occurred August 5th, in what is now Tewksbury. On that day a number of horsemen were seen approaching, but were not suspected of being Indians until they surrounded the house of John Rogers. Rogers received a mortal wound from an arrow while in bed and asleep. He woke with a start, withdrew the arrow, and expired. Rogers's son and daughter were taken captive. A woman who was scalped, and left for dead, recovered. Of John Leviston's family, six were killed and one taken. Dr. Roger Toothaker's wife was killed and his daughter carried off. It is said that the Indians had even tied up the mouths of the dogs for fear of being betrayed by their barking.

Pemaquid<sup>1</sup> four more were killed and six wounded, out of twenty-four men at work outside the fort. Nine persons were also captured at Newbury, and hurried off into the woods. Being overtaken at their first camp, the marauders, according to their usual custom, when hard pressed, tomahawked all the prisoners on the spot. Strange to say, none were killed outright, though all subsequently died of their wounds,

Newbury men  
taken.



INDIAN HEAD BREAKER.

except one youth, who luckily received the blow from the hatchet on his shoulder, instead of his head, and so escaped a lingering death.

Having had several men shot down, while at work outside the fort, the garrison at Pemaquid were in a revengeful mood. Captain Pascho Chubb had relieved Major March of the command. His qualifications for so important a post do not appear, yet a strange fatuity seems to have put him there. The sequel was a tragedy in which Chubb showed himself utterly unfitted for the trust committed to him.

In the month of February, 1696, on a Sunday, a party of Indians came before the fort, with a flag, and demanded a parley. Chubb and some others went out to meet them. Three noted chiefs, Egeremet, Abenquid, and Moxus, were with the other party. In only one respect is the account of what afterward happened at all clear. The object of demanding the parley was said to

<sup>1</sup> In September. Hugh March was one of the slain.

be the exchange of prisoners. In view of the late attacks on the garrison, fear of treachery was no doubt uppermost in the minds of both parties. Mutual recrimination was probable. Yet what actually passed is shrouded in mystery. All positively known is, that the English suddenly fell upon the Indians, that weapons were drawn, and that in the *mêlée* Egeremet and Abenquid, two as untamed spirits as ever lifted the war-hatchet, were killed on the spot. Two others of the party were slain, and one or more made prisoners.<sup>1</sup> Moxus freed himself from the grasp of his enemies and made good his escape. For thus putting himself on a level with savages, Chubb unaccountably escaped formal censure, perhaps, as Mather naïvely remarks, because some well enough liked the thing that was done, although they did not like the manner of doing it. To his credit be it said, Mather was not enough of a Jesuit to stomach such unpardonable baseness.

It was but natural that the Indians should exact prompt and bloody reparation. With the spring, therefore, a new chapter of massacres began, the Piscataqua settlements now being the particular objects of the enemy's fury.

The densely wooded country around York, Me., out of which rises the blue dome of Mount Agamenticus, was threaded by a lonely horse-path uniting the villages of York and Wells. As Thomas Cole and his wife Abigail, with two others, were returning home from a visit to York, they were waylaid in these woods. Cole and his wife were shot dead. The others made good their

<sup>1</sup> CHARLEVOIX's account that two English were slain in this encounter lacks confirmation.

escape. On the 26th of June a large body of Indians crossed over from York Nubble to Rye Beach in their canoes, hid their canoes among the bushes, and made a violent assault upon the scattered houses lying some two miles below Portsmouth. York and Rye. Fourteen persons were killed outright, one was scalped and left for dead, and four taken. After plundering the houses, the enemy set them on fire, and then hastily made off. They were so closely pursued by a party of militia from Portsmouth, that, having halted on the slope of a hill to eat their breakfast,<sup>1</sup> the captives and plunder were retaken, but owing to bad management the marauders got to their canoes again in safety. A month later the people of Dover were waylaid while returning from public worship, three killed, three wounded, and three carried away into captivity.

While the Piscataqua settlements were being thus terrorized, a blow was struck in another quarter which swept away every vestige of that easy-going confidence hitherto reposed in stone walls, as such, regardless of whether they were, or were not, properly manned or commanded. True, the poverty of the country compelled the strictest economy to be practised, yet adherence to a penny-wise, pound-foolish policy, born of a native reluctance to spend, lay at the bottom of many a disaster which might have been averted. Most imprudently, while taking counsel of their own poverty, the authorities wholly failed to take into account the old soldier at Quebec.

Frontenac had only postponed his purpose of taking Pemaquid at all hazards. Everything was carefully planned at Quebec, and Villebon, at St. John, was ready

<sup>1</sup> For this reason since called Breakfast Hill; between Rye and Greenland.

to lend his assistance. In July, 1696, a second expedition was despatched against the English fortress. There were two war-ships, commanded by Le Moyne d'Iberville and de Bonaventure, and a mixed force of Indians, picked up on the way at St. John and Penobscot, com-



IN THE BAY OF FUNDY.

manded by the younger St. Castin. In the Bay of Fundy, Iberville fell in with two English ships-of-war, sent there to intercept Villebon's supplies. A sharp combat at once took place, in the course of which one of the English vessels, the Newport, was dismasted and taken. The other made her escape in a fog.

Having thus rid himself of what might have proved

the ruin of his attempt then and there, Iberville, after refitting his prize, made sail again, and on August 14th the ships cast anchor before the fort.

Pemaquid is a peninsula. The fort stood at the shore, facing the sea. Castin immediately broke ground in the rear of the fortress, where the cemetery now is, thus cutting off communication on the land side. Batteries were also thrown up on the adjacent islands, with so much industry that the investment of the place was quickly completed, both by land and sea.

Pemaquid  
taken.

Captain Chubb was still in command of the fort, with less than a hundred men to defend it. Incapacity or indifference, it matters little which, had left it in this weak state.

The besiegers worked so diligently that their batteries were ready to open fire on the afternoon of the next day after landing.<sup>1</sup> The fort was then summoned. Chubb retorted defiantly enough, but lost courage upon the explosion of a few shells inside his works, reinforced by a savage threat from Castin to give no quarter, and threw open his gates to the elated besiegers, who were far from expecting so easy a success.

Once more the victorious enemy dismantled the works and threw down the walls, constructed with so much labor, yet defended with so little spirit.

By the terms of the surrender Chubb and his men were paroled and sent to Boston. So incensed were the Indians against him that the whole garrison, doubtless, would have fallen victims to their fury, if Chubb, who knew only too well what he might expect from them,

<sup>1</sup> M. TRURY, who seems to have been more at home among such scenes than in his mission, with Father Simon, assisted in this work, each doing his very best.

had not stipulated for a safeguard until his men could be embarked. When they reached Boston Chubb was promptly put in arrest and lodged in gaol, where he lay until the next spring, by which time the feeling against him had so far cooled that his imprisonment was deemed a sufficient punishment, and he was allowed to go to his home at Andover, and there hide his disgrace in retirement.

Meanwhile, another expedition was forming at Boston, under Church's command, to go and clear the eastern frontiers of enemies again. Before it was ready to move news came that Pemaquid had fallen. That disaster redoubled the exertions to get Church to work, for it was thought that the victorious enemy might come to the westward as far as Portsmouth, that place being nearly defenceless against an attack from sea.

It was soon learned, however, that Iberville's squadron had set sail for the eastward instead, after completing the destruction of Pemaquid; so that fears of an attack were removed, only to give place to apprehensions that he and his savage allies might now make their escape unscathed.

It chanced that three men-of-war were then lying idle in Boston harbor. These ships, with two armed merchant vessels, and some few land forces, were hurried off in pursuit of Iberville's squadron. It was sighted, but lost again among the intricate passages of the eastern coast, with which the French pilots were much better acquainted than the English.

Church's expedition proved an even worse failure. With their usual fatuity the authorities had seen fit to release an Indian prisoner from gaol while Church was getting ready. News of his coming had thus every-



where preceded him, with the result that wherever Church went, the Indians had buried themselves deeper in the woods. In vain he tried every means known to his experience to conceal his presence or **Church goes out again.** throw these wily foemen off their guard. All was of no use. His ill-fortune dogged him like his shadow. In order to be able to move his men at will, and undiscovered, he had provided himself with whaleboats, in the handling of which his Cape Indians were thoroughly at home. The better to hide his intended movements from the vigilant savages Church steered first for Monhegan Island, ten miles off the mainland at Pemaquid, where his vessels were securely hid from prying eyes. Then, manning his whaleboats at nightfall, he rowed across into Penobscot Bay, and, after concealing the boats among the bushes at daybreak, ranged the woods up and down in search of the savages. In this way the western shores and islands of the bay were scouted from Owl's Head to Bangor, without getting sight of more than four or five wandering savages in a region usually much frequented by them.

Finding the seacoast deserted as far as Mount Desert, Church now sailed over a long course, landing next at Chignecto or Beaubassin, in Acadia, which place he plundered and burned. The inhabitants, **Chignecto burned.** both French and Indians, fled at his coming, but some of the former returned upon promise of good usage. After reading them a sharp lecture upon the barbarities practised by the savages upon the English, and forcibly contrasting it with his own magnanimity in now keeping his Indians from knocking them all in the head, Church took his departure for the St. John River.

Here there was a trifling skirmish with some workmen, who were building a new fort at the mouth of the river, in which affair one Frenchman was killed and one wounded and taken. From the wounded man it was learned where the great guns, intended for the fort, had been buried below high water mark. These were secured. Church now called a council to decide whether an attempt should be made on Villebon's fort, situated still higher up the river. It was thought impracticable, as the river was so low, and Church accordingly turned homeward.

While on the way back, Church fell in with a reinforcement, under Lieutenant-Colonel Hathorne, who, besides superseding him in the command, to his great chagrin, promptly ordered him back to St. John again. Villebon's fort was reached and attacked this time, but to no purpose, as the English were beaten off without much effort. And so this expedition ended, like the others that had gone before it, in disappointment<sup>1</sup> and disgrace.

Meanwhile, Iberville, after eluding the squadron sent in pursuit of him, had gone to Newfoundland, where he virtually possessed himself of the whole island, by taking St. John's, its chief port. Bonavista and Carbonière Island remained in the hands of the English, only because the cold weather put a stop to further operations. This conquest, so important in every way to French interests, from its bearing upon the control of the Bank fisheries, was thrown away as quickly as it was made,

<sup>1</sup> CHURCH, justly offended at being superseded, is silent about this affair. Hutchinson, II., 94, gives some details, not found elsewhere, perhaps taken from Hathorne's journal of the expedition. Charlevoix confuses the part taken by the English squadron with that acting under Church and Hathorne.

because no measures had been concerted to hold what had been gained. Iberville, therefore, burned St. John's and went back to Placentia, where the French had a poor establishment, placed there more with an eye to covering the French half of the island than for its advantages as a port of commerce.

Though Newfoundland was the more remote, New England had far more at stake there than she had in Acadia, which was, at best, little more than an incumbrance, saddled upon her by the new charter. Indeed to shut the ports of Newfoundland against her would literally have taken the bread out of the mouths of thousands of New England fishermen and their families, besides seriously crippling many other branches of industry closely depending upon these fisheries. It was not accident, but its conceded appropriateness, therefore, which first made the codfish the chosen symbol of Massachusetts, as it continues to be to this day.

In so far, therefore, as these operations threatened to cripple the resources of New England for carrying on the war, as they undoubtedly would have done if turned to better account, they should not be lost sight of; for the cutting off of its water-supply, at its source, from a beleaguered city could hardly have proved more ruinous to the besieged than the cutting off of the Newfoundland fisheries from New England; and it was not to be believed that England would permit France to exclude her from these fisheries without a struggle.

For the English this had been a year of disasters, with hardly one redeeming feature upon which to build hope for the future. At its close the advantage rested wholly with the enemy. East and west, the hostile

tribes were now acting together as one man. Acadia had been lost, Pemaquid demolished. Much had been expected from the expeditions of Church and Hathorne; nothing realized. It is well, therefore, to turn over a new leaf of the sombre tragedy, now happily drawing toward its close.

## XIII

## ONSLAUGHT AT HAVERHILL

March 15, 1697

DURING this war the newer settlements, forming a second line between the Merrimac and Piscataqua, and thus becoming so many outposts to the old sea-coast settlements, suffered much by reason of their exposed situation. Yet the careless settlers do not seem to have realized their danger overmuch, or else long familiarity only served to render them indifferent to it.

Of all these villages little Haverhill, with its thirty odd houses, was perhaps the most exposed, because the Merrimac offered such a short and easy route of attack. Moreover, the Pennacooks, of this river, were well acquainted with every nook and corner of the place.

There was the village, nestling close along the bank of the Merrimac for its own protection, and there was a hamlet boldly thrown out on the hills rising behind it. Village and hamlet were a long mile apart, with a sluggish stream, Little River, crawling between them. In the village there were three block-houses, conveniently placed for its defence, to which the inhabitants might fly in case of an alarm; and it is not unlikely that some of the scattered farm-houses were expected to serve the same purpose at need; but those families who, in such unsettled times as these,

Haverhill  
in 1697.

thus ventured to live apart from neighbors, were sure to bear the brunt of a hostile onset.

It was on the 15th day of March, 1697, when the hills are bleak and bare, the woods yet streaked with snow, and the raw north wind sweeps over the frozen earth in fierce and fitful blasts, that the war-whoop sounded the onslaught so long remembered.

It so chanced that Thomas Dustan, husbandman, rode out that morning to his field, which lay at some distance off from his house. He saw the Indians coming. He had that morning left his wife, Hannah, lying on a sick bed, with Mary Neff, her nurse, and his eight children, whose ages ran from two to seventeen years, wholly unprotected. There was not a moment to lose. Dustan rode hard, with the Indians whooping and yelling behind him, like so many demons let loose. By outstripping them, he gained a few precious moments in which to prepare for instant flight.

First telling his frightened children to run for their lives to the nearest garrison (a weary way for those toddling little feet to travel), Dustan's next thought was to rescue his helpless wife from the clutches of the savages. Throwing the bridle on his horse, he ran into the chamber where she lay, pale and trembling at the appalling sounds now heard close at hand. If Dustan had dreamed of carrying her off with him, he was too late. Every moment's delay was putting all their lives in jeopardy.

Distracted between the thoughts of abandoning his wife thus, and of saving the lives of his children, Dustan rushed from the house, threw himself upon his horse, and galloped off after them. As he rode away the marauders were at his doors, tomahawk in hand.

Fortunately for him, the greedy wretches stopped to rifle the house. This gave Dustan a start of a few minutes, which was improved to the utmost; yet so quickly had all this happened that the terrified children were not more than forty rods from the house when the distressed father overtook them. As his eye ran over the forlorn little group, his heart may well have sunk within him. To save all seemed out of the question. The whole could travel no faster than the youngest of them all, while the shouts of his pursuers announced that they were already on his track, and would soon be up with him. What was to be done?

For just one moment Thomas Dustan thought of snatching up the youngest and most helpless one of all, putting spurs to his horse, and leaving the rest to their fate. It was a horrible temptation, prompted by the instinct of self-preservation, but repented of on the instant. The thought of what that fate must be might well have made the strong man shudder. Scattering shots from his pursuers hastened his decision. Come what would, Dustan resolved to live or die with his little family. Better fall, like a man, defending them to the last, than live to be pointed at as the coward who had saved his own life by the sacrifice of his own flesh and blood.

Yet it was necessary to act with all prudence and skill. Dustan well knew that the savages would not venture within gun-shot until they had first drawn his fire. Urging his little flock to quicken their pace, he wheeled his horse and levelled his gun at the nearest of his pursuers, who instantly halted, expecting a shot. Dustan, however, knew better than to throw his only chance away. He kept the Indians covered with his gun until

the children had widened the distance between them, then coolly rode back to rejoin them. By repeating this manoeuvre the savages were kept at bay, the stout-hearted father fortunately escaping the bullets fired at random in the hope of knocking him off his horse. And in this manner the flight and pursuit continued until the savages had been drawn so far from their band that they gave over the chase in disgust. With unspeakable relief Dustan, at length, saw his little family safe and sound within the shelter of a stout block-house, from which, on looking backward over the ground he had just traversed, he could see his own house in flames.

Meanwhile, those savages who had not joined in the pursuit were hurriedly ransacking Dustan's house, for, by this time, the alarm had spread to the village, which was now up in arms. The nurse had been seized in the attempt to fly with the new-born infant before she had gone many rods from the house.

Upon entering the room where Mrs. Dustan was lying the greasy redskins roughly bade her to get up. With the fear of instant death before her eyes, the poor woman arose, and with trembling hands began to put on her clothes, while her captors were busy loading themselves with all the plunder they could carry away. This done, she was led from the house, which was immediately set on fire, and was soon blazing fiercely.

Smoke and flames were now bursting forth from all the houses in the little neighborhood, which, one after the other, had been, in like manner, assaulted and plundered. Twenty-seven settlers lay dead or dying among the smoking ruins of their own peaceful dwellings. Thirteen miserable captives, shivering with cold and

Mrs. Dustan  
taken.



fright, were huddled together, benumbed by the blow that had so unexpectedly fallen upon them. These were now being hurriedly loaded down with the spoil of their own houses. The savages then plunged into the woods, driving their prisoners before them like so many beasts of burden.

Mrs. Dustan and Mrs. Neff, who still held the baby in her arms, marched with the rest. No mercy was shown to laggards. One miscreant, not yet sated with slaughter, tore the helpless infant from its nurse's arms and dashed out its brains against the nearest tree. Among the prisoners some were

old and feeble. Whenever one showed signs of giving out he was instantly despatched by the blow of a tomahawk, and his load given to another. By this means the retreat was pressed to the utmost.

Though in hourly expectation of meeting with the same fate, Mrs. Dustan succeeded in keeping up with the band during the rest of the day, notwithstanding her extreme bodily weakness. The halt for the night brought

Slain or taken.



DUSTAN MONUMENT.

with it a short respite. She saw that none of her loved ones were among the little knot of captives. And with that knowledge, reviving hope gave her the strength still to bear bravely up against her cruel sufferings of mind and body, as in the deepening gloom she threw herself upon the bare earth, there to live over again in speechless misery the woful tragedy of the day.

Upon resuming their march, the hostile band separated into small parties, the better to throw their pursuers off the scent. To each one was parcelled out its share of the prisoners and plunder.

The party whose property Mrs. Dustan and Mrs. Neff had thus become took a wide circuit through the wilderness of woods, hills, and waters, stretching away to the north. After travelling for several days longer, all fear of pursuit now being at an end, a more westward course was steered, which, at length, brought them out of the woods, on the shores of the Merrimac, some sixty odd miles, as the river runs, from their starting-point. In a few short hours the friendly current would have carried the wanderers to their homes again.

The camp, to which the prisoners were now conducted, was pitched on a pleasant little island, lying at the mouth of the Contoocook River. Here they were given to understand that they would remain, until such a time as their captors should be ready to start for Canada. Should they ever reach it alive, a long and lingering captivity awaited them. Should they perish by the way, who would ever know their fate?

The Indian family, of whom the captive women now formed part for the time being, consisted of two stout warriors, three women and their seven children. Having nothing to fear from two such helpless beings, no

very strict watch was kept upon them, nor did they meet with ill-usage beyond what commonly fell to the lot of captives in their situation, namely, to be the submissive and uncomplaining drudges of their tawny masters. Their masters already were counting upon getting a handsome sum for them in Canada, so it would never do to unfit the captives for the long march before them.

Besides these twelve Indian men, women, and children already mentioned, there was also domesticated among them a captive English lad, one Samuel Leonardson, who already had been a year and a half in their hands, in the course of which he had mastered their language, fallen in with their way of life, and was looked upon and treated as one of themselves. Upon this half-savage stripling the last hopes of a desperate woman now rested.

The captive women could not help showing by their looks something of the despair in their hearts. Whenever they could steal away by themselves, they prayed fervently for deliverance. Sometimes their Indian master would say to them, in mockery of their haggard looks, "What need you trouble yourself? If your God will have you delivered, it shall be so."

Not long before the time set for the long march to Canada to begin, the captives were told that, on arriving at a certain Indian town, they would have to run the gantlet. That is to say, that they would first be stripped of their clothing, and then made to run through a lane formed of all the men, women, and children of the place, all armed with clubs, sticks, or tomahawks, with which each Indian would strike the terrified victims as they ran. To add to their terror, they were also

told how the weak or faint-hearted often fell senseless to the ground under the blows of their brutal tormentors.

The knowledge of what was in store for them seems to have nerved the unhappy captives to an act of desperation. Then, there was the deep-flowing Merrimac, always whispering "home! home!" as it swept by them.

Mrs. Dustan knew that after this journey began all hope of escape would be over. She therefore laid her plans to fly before it should be too late. To attempt this with two stout warriors alive was not to be thought of. There was but one other way. They must die by her hands and those of her companions.

Hannah Dustan was no delicate flower of the city, ready to faint at the pricking of her finger with her needle, but the sturdy helpmate of a sturdy yeoman, whose will to do and dare had been strung to the highest tension by the knowledge that there was one way of escape, and but one.

This settled, the next thing was to gain over the nurse and the boy, Leonardson, to her plan, which was to kill all the Indians without distinction of age or sex, except one boy, who was to be taken away alive. There could be no paltering with the situation. They knew that to let any escape would endanger their own safety.

From this moment, Hannah Dustan pursued her determination with Indian sagacity, and almost savage ferocity.

Young Leonardson was charged to find out just where and how to strike with the hatchet, so as to kill at one blow. There must be no bungling here. The lad seized his first chance to do so. "Strike here," replied the unsuspecting savage, laying a tawny finger upon his temple. Then drawing the same finger rapidly around his shaven

crown, he showed the lad how the knife was used in taking a scalp, and how the scalp was torn from the victim's head. The lesson was well learned.

The prisoners now knew what they had to do, and



HANNAH DUSTAN SLAYS HER CAPTORS.

how to do it. The time for the attempt was fixed for the very next night.

In the dead of night, when the Indians lay fast asleep in their wigwam, three dusky forms rose noiselessly and stealthily up from their midst. Each grasped a hatchet. Each had marked a victim. Bending over the prostrate bodies of the sleepers, blow followed blow in quick succession. Mrs. Dustan's weapon was buried in the brain of her master; Leonardson's in that of the

same Indian who had directed him where to strike. None escaped, save a squaw, who, though sorely wounded, ran out into the thickets, where she hid herself, and the boy whose life they had agreed to spare. He got away, unharmed, in the darkness and confusion of the moment.

**The Escape.**

Arming herself with her dead master's gun and tomahawk, Mrs. Dustan led the way to the place where the canoes were beached. All these were stove and sunk, except the one in which the fugitives now pushed out upon the broad river, with no other thought than to hasten away from the scene of slaughter. Two of their destined victims had saved themselves by flight. They knew that the next encampment was not far off, and would soon be alarmed.

The shore had scarcely been left behind, however, when Mrs. Dustan suddenly recollected that, in the hurry of their flight, they had neglected to take off the scalps of the slain. In this woman an iron will seems united with cool courage and rare presence of mind. She would not leave the accursed spot without carrying away with her the bloody evidences of their exploit. These, at least, could not be called in question. The canoe was again headed for the shore, and not until the bloody trophies of that fearful night's work were secured did the fugitives again embark on their perilous voyage.

It was beset with dangers. Many a hideous fall or treacherous shallow lay between the fugitives and their destined haven. Not far below their starting-point, the bed of the river is heaved up, from shore to shore, in huge masses of jagged rock, through which the pent-up waters boil and plunge with indescribable fury. Here the canoe had to be unloaded and carried around

the falls, before it could be launched into smooth water again. Below these again, the free course of the river is much broken by rifts and shallows, where only a skilful handling of the paddle could keep the canoe from oversetting. Hardly was one danger surmounted before the distant roar of angry waters told them of another ahead. Down this perilous road the fugitives held their steady course, hope rising higher and higher as the long leagues of wooded shores swept majestically by them. They took turns at the paddle, keeping a sharp lookout for lurking enemies. In the night two slept while the third plied the paddle.<sup>1</sup> Half-starved, worn out with unceasing labor and watchfulness, the feelings with which the weary wanderers saw at last the familiar shores and cottages of Haverhill rising before them can only be guessed. They were welcomed home as beings risen from the dead.

The story of the exploit soon spread throughout the length and breadth of the colonies, and was everywhere the theme of mingled wonder and admiration. After recovering from the effects of their captivity, all the actors in this remarkable tragedy went to Boston,<sup>2</sup> taking with



DUSTAN TANKARD.

<sup>1</sup> It is said that the fugitives were hospitably received and entertained by Jonathan Tyng, at his house on Wickasuck Island.

<sup>2</sup> "MAY 1, 1697. Hannah Dustan came to see us; I gave her part of Connecticut flax. She saith her master, whom she killed, did formerly live with Mr. Rowlandson, at Lancaster. He told her that when he prayed the English way, he thought that was good, but now he found the French way was better."—*Sewall Papers*.

them the ghastly trophies that Hannah Dustan would not leave behind her. The Massachusetts General Court being then in session, a reward of twenty-five pounds was voted to the Dustans, and twelve pounds ten shillings each to Mary Neff and Samuel Leonardson. Besides this gratuity, doubly welcome to those who had lost their all, Governor Nicholson, of Maryland, sent Hannah Dustan a pewter tankard, as a mark of his regard for her remarkable heroism. This token is still in existence.

Monuments have been raised to commemorate this exploit, both at Haverhill, where the savage onslaught began, and at Dustan's Island, in the town of Boscawen, N. H., where the maternal vengeance overtook some of the actors in that day's work. Yet, strange to say, even to this day the site of Thomas Dustan's house is not positively known.



## XIV

### TO THE PEACE OF RYSWICK

UNKNOWN to the people of New England, during the winter of 1696-97 a blow was impending by the side of which Indian raids were trifles indeed. And when it was known, the danger itself had passed away, like the storm-cloud, watched in doubt and dismay, until it has drifted far down the darkened heavens, and light and sunshine have come again.

Canada being a royal colony, its affairs were really directed from Versailles. For years Louis had been importuned to lay Boston in ashes, as the only means of securing the tranquillity of Canada. Hitherto, more weighty affairs at home had kept the project in abeyance, but at last Louis was ready to act. At the ports of Brest and Rochefort a formidable squadron, consisting of ten heavy ships, two fire-ships and a galliot,<sup>1</sup> was being fitted out, first to destroy Boston, and afterward to lay waste the New England coast as far as Portsmouth. New York and Albany were to be served in the same way, provided all went as it was hoped and expected. A good deal of other work was cut out for the Marquis de Nesmond, who was to command; but these were the leading objects with which he was charged. So much pains was taken to keep the project a profound secret that orders were sent to Fron-

**Fleet sails to  
burn Boston.**

<sup>1</sup> A SMALL open, vessel, using both sails and oars and intended to chase. The crews were usually soldiers, laying down their oars to take up their muskets.

tenac to have fifteen hundred men in readiness by a certain date, without letting him know for what service they were wanted.

News that this powerful armament was at sea reached Boston some time in the summer, and its object was so easily guessed that the whole country, far and near, was stirred as never before. At that time the reliable Major March was out scouting with five hundred men, at the eastward. Boston, as well as all the seacoast towns, was in a state of feverish excitement. The old fortifications were overhauled and repaired, new ones built, and heavy guns mounted along the water-front, and at the castle. For weeks the provincial militia were held in readiness to march to the threatened points. These measures are a sufficiently clear indication of public feeling.

Fortunately for New England, the whole enterprise fell through. De Nesmond had been saddled with so many orders, his passage across the Atlantic was so long, that when he arrived at Placentia (July 24th), it was too late in the season to bring the cooperating land forces down from Quebec, where they had been held to prevent news of the intended descent from getting noised abroad. To this puerile attempt to combine the operations of a fleet and army three thousand miles away, New England owed her escape from a great danger. Old as he was, Frontenac would have managed the affair much better.

In all probability, the holding of so many men inactive in Canada had a tendency to diminish the number of Indian raids during the summer. There were, however, more than enough to show what a handful of creeping savages could do among thousands of unguarded husbandmen. In June a large war-party placed them-

selves in ambush outside of the village of Exeter, N. H., meaning to make an assault early on the next morning. Against the advice of their friends, some women and children of the village went out into the fields to gather wild strawberries. In order to frighten them back, some alarm guns were fired. This quickly brought all the people together in arms, and thereby frustrated the intended attack, as the Indians supposed themselves discovered, and after firing a few random shots made a hasty retreat. One person was killed, another wounded, and a child carried off.<sup>1</sup>

Exeter visited.

How death lurked on every side is strongly emphasized by the following incident. One quiet Sabbath afternoon, early in July, Major Charles Frost, with several of his neighbors, was returning home from meeting in Eliot, Me. The road on which they were riding had been ambushed in a retired spot by an outlying party of savages looking for scalps. To make sure of their prey, the lurking assassins had stuck some bushes in the ground, at a turn of the path, behind which they crouched, armed and ready. The Major's two sons were permitted to pass the ambuscade in safety, but the worthy Major, against whom the savages had nursed their revenge ever since the kidnapping affair at Dover, eight years before, was shot dead in the road. Dennis Downing and John Heard's wife, two of Frost's companions, were also killed on the spot, and Heard was wounded. "The good Lord keep us in these perilous times!" exclaims pious Joseph Storer, in giving an account of the affair. "The good Lord sanctify it to us all!"

Major Frost  
slain.

<sup>1</sup> BELKNAP'S *New Hampshire*, I., 279, 280.

In a day or two after, three men carrying the mail were waylaid and killed as they were leaving Wells. Storer warns his brother, Captain John Hill, at Saco, against travelling in the daytime. Indeed, the ways had now become so dangerous for men, that dogs were trained to carry the mail between exposed points. Frost had been a tower of strength to this weak corner of Maine, and it is no wonder that his death should be mourned as a public calamity.

After committing several more murders in this vicinity, the Indians next made their unwelcome appearance among the Saco settle-



DOG MAIL-CARRIER.

ments. Of a party of five belonging to the garrison of Saco fort, who were chopping wood on Cow Island, in the Saco, three were killed, and three more, posted as sentinels, but keeping careless watch, surprised and carried off.<sup>1</sup> In going down the river the marauders were fired upon from the shore, and some of them hurt.

One tradition of this descent deserves to be preserved. Captain Humphrey Scamman's garrison stood on the bank of the river, about two miles from the sea. He was at work that day, mowing in his meadow, the house being left in charge of his wife and children. The day was sultry, and the labor fatiguing, so goodwife Scamman presently sent their little ten-year-old boy to his father with a mug of ale, probably charging him to be

<sup>1</sup> THESE were Lieutenant Fletcher and his two sons.

careful not to spill it by the way. Soon after starting on his errand the lad caught sight of the Indians approaching the house. He instantly turned back, still carrying the mug in his hands, but it was now too late, as the Indians quickly took possession of the house, and made prisoners of the whole family, including Scamman, all of whom were carried off to Canada. At the end of the war they were released and returned home. Their house was found in the same condition as when they had left it, even to the beer-mug<sup>1</sup> which the frightened boy had hastily set down on the dresser, when he ran back home to warn his mother of the approach of the terrible redskins.

Saco raided.



SCAMMAN'S JUG.

In September, bloody notice was served on the inhabitants of Lancaster, Mass., that safety was only to be purchased at the price of unremitting vigilance. This town, which had suffered so severely in former wars, was again completely surprised, nearly twenty persons killed, one of whom was the Rev. John Whiting, the young pastor of the church there,<sup>2</sup> and five more carried away into captivity. Two

At Lancaster.

<sup>1</sup> This interesting relic, a brown earthen jug, evidently of Dutch make, decorated with an equestrian figure of William III., is now in the possession of Joseph Moody, Esq., of Saco.

<sup>2</sup> The meagre account of this affair is taken from Mather. Hutchinson loosely places

or three houses were burnt with their occupants, too decrepit to fly, in them. The raiders were pursued for two days without coming up with them.

The long wished for peace of Ryswick was proclaimed at Boston, on December 10, 1697. At between three

**Peace at last.**

and four in the afternoon, eight or ten drums and trumpets sounded out the glad tidings to the citizens. Hostilities with the Indians did not, however, cease for some time to come, or not until they found out that the French no longer dared to give them open support.

The winter of 1697-98, was the coldest within the memory of his generation, Mather says. Moreover, the settlers along the Merrimac were destined to feel once and again the rage of their old enemies before the day of trial was passed. Proclamation of peace, by sound of trumpet in the streets of Boston, could not stay the stroke of the tomahawk, or turn from their bloody designs those who had a debt of vengeance yet to pay.

In the latter part of February<sup>1</sup> a war-party made a fierce onslaught upon Andover, Mass. They had apparently singled out two of the foremost citizens for their prey. The house of Captain Pascho Chubb, late commandant at Pemaquid, was assaulted, and he and his wife were slain on the spot. At the same time the house of Lieutenant-Colonel Dudley Bradstreet<sup>2</sup> was attacked, the inmates dragged out of doors, one of them brutally tomahawked,<sup>3</sup>

**Killing at Andover.**

the number killed at twenty or thirty. Mr. Whiting was the successor of J. Rowlandson. It is said that quarter was offered him by the Indians, but that he preferred to fight for his life and lost it. He was only thirty-three.

<sup>1</sup> THE double date given by Sewall and Pike, February 22, <sup>1797</sup>/<sub>1798</sub>, corresponds with March 4, 1798.

<sup>2</sup> STILL standing in North Andover.

<sup>3</sup> MAJOR WADE's son, of Medford, a guest and relative of the family.

and the rest, strange to say, after a short detention, set at liberty. Besides rifling Colonel Bradstreet's house, the marauders burned some of his neighbors' houses and barns, with their contents, but only two persons, besides those already reported, are known to have been killed by them. Mather relates that the Rev. Thomas Barnard, the minister of the place, narrowly escaped their



BRADSTREET HOUSE, AT NORTH ANDOVER, MASS.

fury; and Sewall adds that the pulpit cushions were taken away and burned.

While making off toward Haverhill, the same party fell in with Jonathan Haynes and Samuel Ladd, of that town, driving their teams homeward, and killed both of them. A son of each was taken at the same time.

Occasional outrages of this sort, continued during the spring months, served to signal the expiring efforts of the war, like the random shots fired after the main battle

is over. Deprived by the peace of the means of carrying on the war, the hostile tribes quickly realized that since they had been abandoned by their friends, the only course left was to make terms with their enemies. Finding them in this temper, Major Converse and Captain Alden held a conference with some of the chief sachems at Penobscot, in October; the Indians, as usual, throwing all the blame of their past acts upon the French.

**Treaty of  
Casco.**

There was no doubt, however, that they were now sincerely desirous of peace. A meeting was therefore arranged for this end, which took place at or near Mare Point in Casco Bay, in January, when articles of submission were signed by Moxus and many more chiefs, representing the different tribes.

By this treaty the Indians freely acknowledged their past misdeeds, set forth in the strongest colors by the English, and once again pledged their worthless honor for the performance of the same old threadbare obligations. Next to the cessation of the long reign of arson, pillage, and murder, the rescue of English captives was the chief object to be attained. Some hundreds of these were scattered far and wide among their brutal captors. They were to be restored, but the inclemency of the season prevented this merciful act from taking effect at once. Many had perished miserably of ill treatment or starvation, but all who were able to bear the fatigues of the long march homeward, and who, themselves, wished to return to their friends, were permitted to do so. Strange to say, not a few preferred to remain among the savages, thus furnishing a homely, but apt illustration of the ease with which so-called civilized beings relapse into barbarism. We may take comfort in the belief that not one of these renegades

**Captives  
given up.**



would have made a useful citizen, had he remained true to his color and teachings.

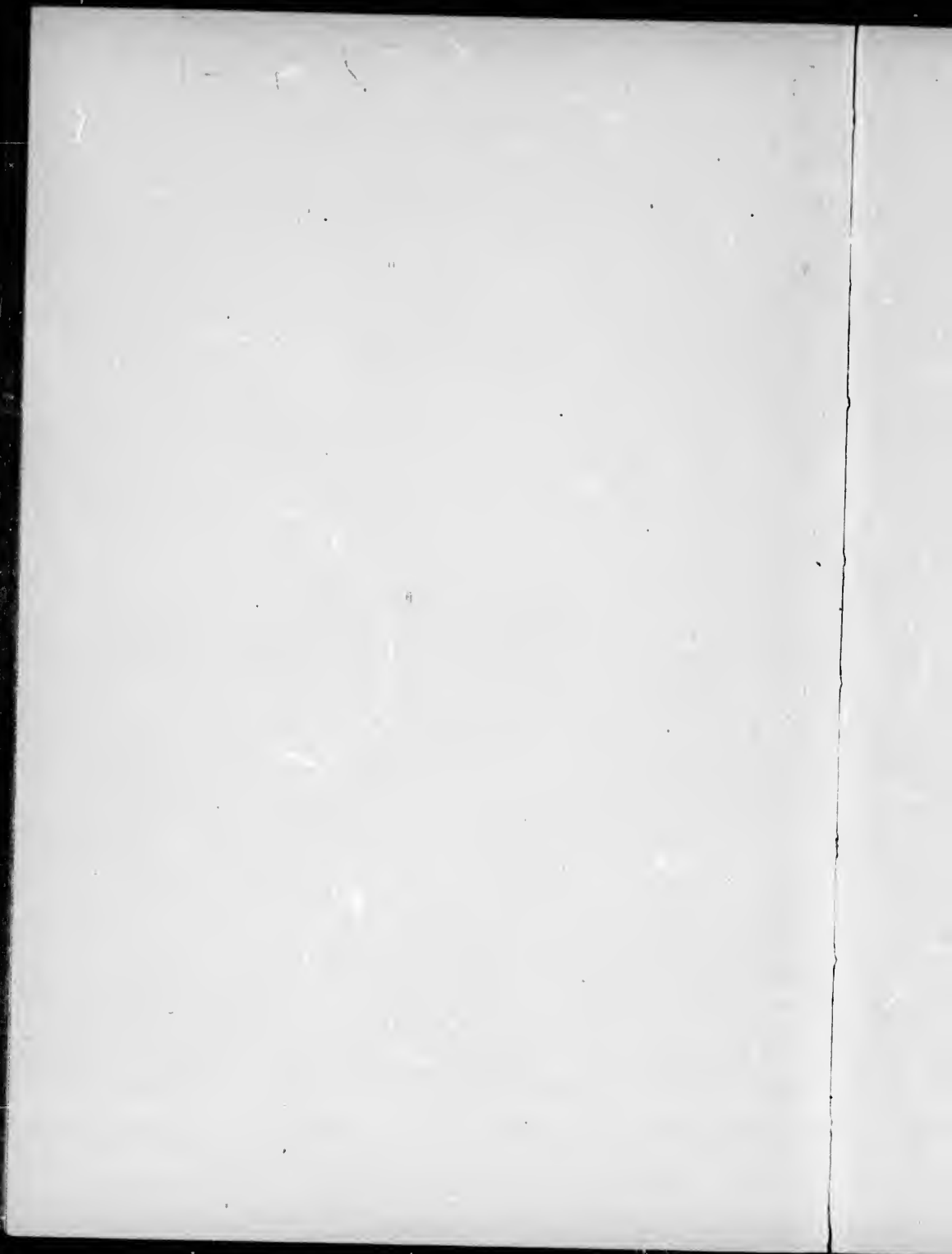
Various estimates of the loss of life in this war are to be met with. But it is evident that none were carefully compiled, as they run all the way from 500 to 700 killed. The latter number is probably the more accurate. Asacumbuit alone claimed to have slain one hundred and fifty persons with his own hand. In view of the length of the war, the highest figure does not seem large, but when we reflect that the losses mostly fell upon the agricultural population, and in many cases virtually wiped out of existence entire towns or villages; that hundreds of dwellings and barns were burned to ashes, with their contents; and that progress, as measured by pushing forward the frontier, was beaten back twenty years, the true nature of this conflict stands out in strong relief. The weakness of the English plan seems to have been in the attempt to hold an untenable line, more as a point of honor than from the dictates of a sound policy. It has been seen that the effort severely taxed the entire resources of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, both in men and money.

Though no estimate of the losses to the Indians is possible, it may be measured somewhat by its visible results. Many of their best warriors had fallen in fights. As many more, perhaps, had died from the effects of disease or starvation, occasioned by the destruction of their winter supply of corn, which put them to the most cruel privations. It was now become a matter of difficulty to raise fifty warriors, where it had been easy to raise a hundred and fifty. In some cases only fragments of tribes remained, and in others the remnants had joined their nearest neighbors for mutual protection.

Losses by  
the war.

The hard, uncompromising fact, which stared this doomed people in the face, was that they could not afford even trifling losses, impossible to be repaired; and repair them they could not so long as they were being hunted like wild beasts. At the close of the war they held nothing that they could call their own within sixty miles of the sea-coast, between the Merrimac and Penobscot rivers. That, surely, was a visible sign of their impending doom.

**QUEEN ANNE'S WAR**



## XV

### THE NEW OUTLOOK

1702-1703

WAR broke out again between England and France in 1702.<sup>1</sup> In Europe it was called the War of the Spanish Succession; in the colonies, Queen Anne's War; as that princess had succeeded to the throne of England, made vacant by the death of her great brother-in-law William III.

Two dramatic incidents preceded the formal declaration of war. In taking leave of his grandson, a boy of seventeen, whom he was seating on the throne of Spain, in the teeth of Europe, Louis XIV. had made use of the picturesque and significant expression, "*Il n'y a plus de Pyrénées.*"<sup>2</sup>

This act gave birth to the formidable coalition meant to curb the ambition of the brilliant despot of Versailles.

The other event took place at the death-bed of the exiled James II. According to his biographer, Louis approached the bedside of the dying man, and after desiring those present to remain, as if to give greater solemnity to what he was about to do, he said, "I am come, sir, to acquaint you, that whenever it shall please God to call your majesty out

Death-bed of  
James II.

<sup>1</sup> WAR was proclaimed at Westminster May 4, 1702.

<sup>2</sup> "THERE are no longer any Pyrenees."

of this world, I will treat your son, the Prince of Wales, in the same manner I have treated you, and acknowledge him, as he then will be, King of England."<sup>1</sup>

As an example of studied insolence this declaration is almost without a parallel in history. The insult



QUEEN ANNE.

stung Protestant England to the quick. In a few short months William followed James to the grave, but his spirit still survived, the resort to arms was fully accepted, and war declared on May 4, 1702.

Willing or unwilling, the colonies of the two great belligerents were none the less to be dragged into the

quarrel, though under conditions widely different from those existing in Europe. The coming ordeal was indeed one to make men thoughtful, yet there are no signs of faltering.

There were in all New England about 120,000 persons of all ages. Although New England had the most men, Canada invariably had the better leaders.

<sup>1</sup> JAMES died at St. Germain, September 16, 1701, at the age of sixty-seven.

Military men were chosen there to conduct military enterprises. There were none such in New England. Border warfare was the only school in which her rude yeomanry had been trained up, and as soon as the exigency was over they returned to their farms or workshops. The Canadian yeomanry, on the contrary, being mostly hunters, boatmen, or wood-rangers, and always in the woods, were about as well skilled in forest warfare as the savages with whom they fraternized; so that disparity in numbers was by no means the true measure of the ability of the combatants.

Canada and New  
England com-  
pared.

There was, however, an enrolment of the colonial militia into regiments, troops, and companies. But with only an annual muster to bring them together their discipline stood small chance of being improved. The truth is that the spirit of the people was unalterably opposed to a permanent military establishment of any sort whatever. Their fathers, in their wisdom, had fixed the tradition that a standing army was a standing danger, and so the sons would have none of it. Hence the career of arms, with its twin incentives, thirst for glory and hope of promotion, was as good as shut to the ambitious young men of the day. Unlike the young Canadian nobility, they took the field from a stern sense of duty, not from choice, having it always in mind that they were soldiers only for the time being. Citizen soldiers are good for little until they have lost their identity as citizens in the soldier. Consequently, great enterprises had turned to great failures during the last war, not so much from faulty conceptions, as from the want of organization, discipline, command, and of that kind of confidence

Militia system.

which comes with them. For mere bush fighting raw levies had indeed proved sufficient, but for such operations as laying siege to Quebec, something more than a courageous rabble was needed.

This enrolment of the fighting strength of the colony into troops and regiments, which, by the by, seldom took the field as such, did, however, facilitate the mustering of such bodies as were called out upon emergencies, when each regiment was required to furnish its quota, either by voluntary enlistment or by draft. Here we find the germ of that antiquated militia system which endured well into the present century. More curious still it is to note that the methods in force in our own time, with all their abuses, were in full operation in what a later generation has been taught to look back upon as a model of civic virtue. There were those who slipped out of one colony into another to avoid military service or, worse still, the tax-gatherer. In order to put a stop to wholesale desertions from the frontier towns, a law had to be passed prohibiting all persons of sixteen years of age from leaving them. Yet fear of the law was less potent than fear of the scalping-knife. There were also bounties and bounty-jumpers; and there was falsification of names and ages, as well as fraudulent raising of provision returns, muster-rolls, and the like. And, finally, there was also the same eager buying up of substitutes by those whose courage or patriotism failed them at the pinch. Such was the system and such were its abuses.

If the military arm was thus weak, the civil administration was powerless to strengthen it, because no soldier had ever been put at the head of the government. Al-



though captain-general by virtue of his commission, only here and there one in the long line of governors was possessed of more military knowledge than could be picked up on the annual training-field, where the martial exercises were usually opened with a prayer. Not that men who pray will not fight, and fight well, but there is evidence that by this time the spirit that had prompted the fathers always to seek the Lord before unsheathing their swords, had grown somewhat weaker with the sons. In Vaudreuil, Dudley was going to be pitted against an adversary of experience in active warfare, and fare accordingly. And as events move on, it

Civilian  
leaders.



LOUIS XIV.

will be seen that the English were driven to adopt the tactics of their enemies. In diplomacy, however, the two distinguished adversaries were more evenly matched.

In this war, as in the last, the colonies had for an adversary Louis XIV., surnamed the Great. If he had been as blind to the wants or perils of his transatlantic subjects as England was to hers, the contest would have

been more equal. Such, however, was not the case. The whole situation on this side of the water was about as well understood at Versailles as at Quebec; so well indeed that in most cases the movements of war-parties upon our frontiers were generally first ordered or sanctioned or suggested by



GOVERNOR SIMON BRADSTREET.

Louis himself. Though it may seem strange that this monarch, with half Europe leagued against him, should thus find time to turn from great affairs to little, it is no less true. While he lived, Louis not only insisted upon ruling everything, but upon knowing everything. It was really therefore with him

that the English colonists were now measuring their strength.

England's policy, briefly stated, like that of the savage toward his offspring, was to leave her colonies to shift for themselves. If they survived the ordeal, well and good; if not, it would be because nature had not well fitted them for the battle of life.

In the brief breathing time allowed from the ravages of war, the wheel of time had moved relentlessly on-

case.  
 about  
 Que-  
 ases  
 were  
 l by  
 elf.  
 may  
 that  
 with  
 o p e  
 inst  
 hus  
 urn  
 airs  
 no  
 hile  
 not  
 pon  
 ing,  
 ing  
 It  
 ere-  
 im  
 heir

age  
 hift  
 nd  
 ell  
 ges  
 on-

ward. Many of the chief actors had disappeared from the stage. Frontenac was dead at seventy-seven. Bradstreet, one of the last survivors among the first-comers, had died at the great age of ninety-four; so had Lord Bellomont, after a brief rule of only two years; and so had Stoughton, who had borne the burden of govern-



THE EARL OF BELLOMONT.

ment since the death of Phips. Madockawando, the father-in-law of St. Castin, had also succumbed to the dread destroyer, with many more whose names once struck terror to the hearts of their enemies. In view of its probable murderous character, it would perhaps be too much to say that the war was popular in New England. But the people were intensely loyal to the cause

of Protestantism, of which William was the recognized champion, and intensely partisan, too. They resented, as warmly as all Protestant England did, the insult put upon the nation in challenging William's right to the throne. Canada was wholly Catholic. Those in authority there took their cue from their royal master in declaring William a usurper. So that there was no want of antagonisms to fan the old embers into a fiercer blaze than ever.

The short administration of the Earl of Bellomont covered a season of recuperation from the exhaustion of war. He died in office on March 6, 1700. Stoughton, the lieutenant-governor, having died the next year, the government devolved for the first time upon the Council, a cumbrous body of twenty-eight persons, of whom a majority constituted the executive for the time being.

Joseph Dudley succeeded Lord Bellomont as governor. He came into office with a war on his hands, which, for ten years, taxed all his resources to the utmost, and the fact stands out in strong relief that his worst enemies, whom he took no great pains to conciliate, were forced to admire his abilities, much as they disliked him as a ruler and a man. Although the son of a Puritan of the sternest type, Dudley's own leanings were strongly toward absolutism. By the old Puritan party he was looked upon as the degenerate son of a noble sire; but even they had the wisdom to see that the times had altered, since they made their own rulers, and were not indisposed to give Dudley a trial, thinking him perhaps, on the whole, better than a stranger. But they never could or would forget his having taken office just after the vacating of the old charter. That wound still rankled.

Dudley arrived at Boston, June 11, 1702. He was well received even by those members of the Council who had sent him to prison in the time of Sir Edmund Andros. In the face of political changes such as few men have experienced (and in his limited sphere of action Dudley was a consummate politician) the new governor could well afford to let bygones be bygones. No doubt his late opponents were more than pleased with the unlooked-for proffer of a general amnesty, and so for the present there was a truce to the old quarrels.

There was certainly need enough for united support from all parties. Dudley found his province assailed at once by war and pestilence. During the winter no less than three hundred inhabitants of Boston were carried off by the small-pox, a disease which had periodically scourged the larger towns since their first settlement, almost unopposed.

Looking abroad, for the most part the Indians remained in the same situation in which the close of the



GOVERNOR JOSEPH DUDLEY.

war had left them, their villages being equivalent to outposts guarding the main avenues to Canada, or covering their lines of supply or retreat. And they were situated just far enough from the English border to make it difficult to attack them by surprise. Some of the more wary among them, however, keenly realizing the dangers to which they were exposed in time of war, were easily persuaded by M. de Vaudreuil to withdraw themselves to Canada, ostensibly for their own protection, but really as a defence against the Iroquois. These seceding Abenakis were located at Becancour, a little river flowing into the St. Lawrence, midway between Montreal and Quebec; and at St. Francis, on the river of that name, flowing into Lake St. Peter. They were thus placed within supporting distance of each other, under the keen eye of Vaudreuil and the watchful care of the Jesuit missionaries!<sup>1</sup> Still others had withdrawn from the Kennebec to Penobscot.

Dudley fully realized how much the peace of New England depended upon holding the lately hostile tribes firm to their professions of friendship. If they could be kept quiet the war would be shorn of its terrors. It was therefore all-important to know their present disposition, and to meet their grievances, if such they had, in a spirit of conciliation and just dealing. To this end he summoned them to a council, which accordingly met at Casco,<sup>2</sup> June 20, 1703,

Council at  
Casco.

<sup>1</sup> The seignory of Becancour was granted in 1647 to Sieur de Becancour. The Abenaki village was on the east side of the river Becancour, at some distance from its mouth. The seignory of St. Francis was granted in 1678 to Sieur de Crevier. The Indian village lay on the east side of the river St. Francis, which communicates by a branch with Lake Memphremagog, and so opened a practical route to New England, often traversed by war-parties.

<sup>2</sup> This was New Casco fort, built at Falmouth in 1700; so called to distinguish it from Old Casco (Fort Loyal) destroyed by the enemy in 1690.

and was largely attended by delegates from the different tribes. Hither came the old, seasoned, war chiefs of the Penobscots, Norridgewocks, Androscoggins and Pennacooks, armed and painted for the ceremony, accompanied by a numerous retinue of their wild followers.

When the council opened Dudley saluted the grave sagamores present as his friends and brothers, and said that he was come to reconcile whatever differences had happened since the last treaty. After the usual pause, the Indian orator who spoke for the rest assured the governor that "as high as the sun was above the earth," so far were their thoughts from breaking the peace between them. In proof of sincerity they first presented him with a belt of wampum, and then invited him to go with them to the two heaps of stones, erected to commemorate a former treaty at this place, affectionately called The Two Brothers.<sup>1</sup> Still further to strengthen the bond between them, both parties added more stones to the piles before them. A little later, the noted chiefs Bomazeen and Captain Samuel came in to declare that they, too, were "as firm as the mountains," and should continue so "as long as the sun and moon endured."

So far everything had gone smoothly. But something now occurred which disturbed the white men not a little. The council was breaking up with the usual noisy demonstrations of joy. When it came the turn of each party to fire a salute, in ratification of the treaty, upon being asked to do so the English fired first, without hesitation. But when the Indians fired, it was no-

<sup>1</sup> This name has since been taken by the two little islands lying off the Falmouth shore.

ticed that their guns were loaded with ball.<sup>1</sup> Treachery seemed lurking in the air.

A round of festivities succeeded the deliberations of the council. The Indians danced, sang, and shouted to their hearts' content. Many presents were given them, which were thankfully received; and the assembly broke up with fair promise that the harassing warfare of former years would not be renewed. In this belief the scattered settlers along the seaboard prepared to stand their ground, all unconscious of the storm about to burst upon their devoted heads.

<sup>1</sup> DUDLEY afterward wrote to Subercase, governor of Nova Scotia, laying bare the treachery of his predecessor, Broullan. Subercase had accused the provincial troops of committing a sacrilegious act in digging up the heart of Broullan from the place where it was buried. Dudley responds in these terms: "About five years since I had gone to Casco Bay to make an agreement with the Indians of my government. There came to that place two Frenchmen of Port Royal, to whom M. de Broullan had promised two hundred pistoles to kill me. These Frenchmen came to Casco Bay disguised as Indians, and were present when I was making my agreement, but their hearts failed them in what they had undertaken. Some time after, one of the two, being a prisoner, and brought here, acknowledged it to me, in my house, on his knees."



## XVI

### SIX TERRIBLE DAYS

August, 1703

WHILE Dudley was congratulating himself upon having brought the Indian tribes so emphatically to commit themselves in favor of peace, Vaudreuil, governor of Canada, through his agents, the missionaries, was doing his utmost to prevail on them to renew the war. Even while the conference at Casco was in progress, it is asserted that the Sokokis, of Pigwacket, were only waiting for a French reinforcement to begin their march for the border.<sup>1</sup>

Under the late treaty<sup>2</sup> the French claimed to the Kennebec. The English denied this claim in toto. It was no very difficult matter to bring the tribes living to the east of that river, who had suffered in the past from the encroachments of the English, into full and entire accord with the French upon this question. Boundary  
question. It was plain enough, even to the dullest perception, that, unless prevented, the English would move back into the disputed territory, from which they had so recently been driven, without loss of time. Already there was talk of rebuilding Pemaquid. Vau-

<sup>1</sup> PENHALLOW.

<sup>2</sup> THE treaty of Ryswick restored Acadia to France, without fixing its boundaries. The English still insisted that the St. Croix was the true dividing line, but in 1700 both parties agreed upon the St. George, the English having no settlements beyond that river, while the French had.

dreuil thus had ample material with which to work upon the fears or prejudices of the eastern tribes, and he hastened to improve it.

As soon as hostilities had actually ceased many of the fugitive settlers had gone back to their deserted homes between Wells and Falmouth. If his plans should succeed, Vaudreuil aimed at nothing short of making a clean sweep of all the settlements in Maine. If those in the west were destroyed, he argued that there would be less danger of the English renewing those in the east. So the work was to be thoroughly done, by making a combined attack on all the settlements at once. In this way one would be prevented from helping the other, the panic would become more widespread, and the conquest probably be all the more easy. But first of all the Abenakis of Maine must be worked up to the proper pitch of fury against the English.

A pretext was soon found. It chanced that while St. Castin was away from home, some lawless Englishmen had plundered his house. He being an Abenaki chief, the Penobscots instantly resented it as an insult offered to the whole tribe. The two missionaries, Bigot of Penobscot, and Rale of Norridgewock, seized the opportunity thus offered still further to inflame their wrath; so that what ought to have been equitably adjusted, without provoking ill-blood, was wickedly used to plunge the nations into war again. This, at any rate, was the assigned cause. But the other fact that in less than eight weeks a general assault began on all the settlements of Maine, denotes more preparation than so trivial a provocation would seem to imply. Be that as it may, on August 10th, several bands of French and Indians, clearly act-

ing in concert, and estimated at not less than five hundred in all, suddenly fell upon the reviving villages of Maine with fire and slaughter.

The blow seems to have fallen first upon Wells,<sup>1</sup> and thence have been taken up all along the shore as far as Falmouth. Not one hamlet escaped. At Wells thirty-nine persons were either killed or carried away into captivity.

There is a local tradition touching an adventure of one Stephen Harding, who kept the ferry at the Kenne-



ANCIENT FERRY-WAY, KENNEBUNK RIVER, ME.

bunk River, where all travel passed at that time. The story has probably lost nothing in being handed down through several generations, yet its main incidents are believed to be true.

At this early day the only travelled ways closely hugged the seashore, taking advantage of the hard sand beaches, passing the intercepting streams by fords or ferries, and cutting across the gray, old, rock-ribbed headlands by strips of half-worked roads, practicable

<sup>1</sup> WELLS then included what is now Kennebunk. News of the attack reached Boston on the 11th. This was followed on the next day by exaggerated accounts of the affair. "August 12, at night, news comes from Wells that they have buried 15—durst not go to bury their uttermost (outermost). Lost, as they fear, 60," *Sewall Papers*.

only for the two-wheeled carts then in use, yet dignified by the sounding title of the King's Highways.<sup>1</sup>

Harding's log-house stood on a swell of ground enclosed between Gooch's beach, the main river, and a tidal creek making in from it toward the west. From here the view is clear and open across the beach for a mile toward Wells, so that no one could approach the house that way unseen in the daytime, if the occupants were on the lookout.

Tradition reports Harding to have been a man of uncommon physical strength and courage—in fact, a veritable giant. The Indians knew him well, and he knew them of old.

One morning, on going out of the house, Harding saw quite a large body of some sort of people coming over the beach from the direction of Wells. He was at first undecided whether they were friends or foes, but their wary movements soon satisfied him that they must be Indians. They were, in fact, the raiders who had ravaged Wells the day before, returning with their prisoners and booty.

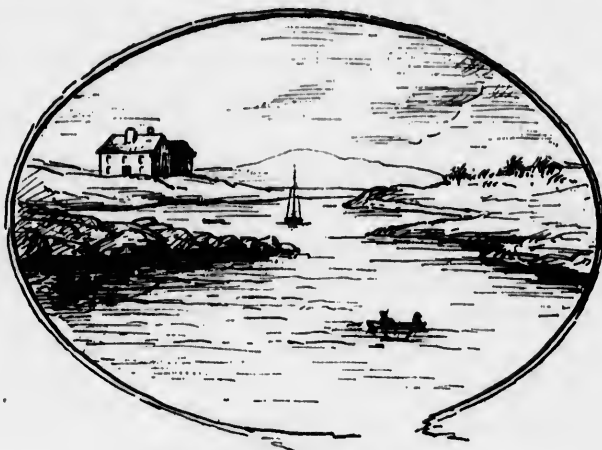
It was now Harding's turn to be alarmed. Fortunately the redskins were still a good way off; but there was not a moment to lose. Hurrying back to the house, Harding told his wife to take their little year-old infant, make haste with it across the creek, and hide herself at a certain oak-tree, until he should join her. The terrified woman snatched up the child, and ran off with it, as she was told; while Harding, more bold than prudent, remained behind to protect his property, should his fears prove groundless. Meantime, the thought struck Harding that more

Harding's  
escape.

<sup>1</sup> In some localities in Maine these ancient roads may be traced to this day.

Indians might be lurking about his premises. If so he would inevitably be caught in the toils.

It turned out as he thought, for upon going into his blacksmith shop, and giving a loud whoop, four stout Indians started up from the ground where they had lain concealed, and made a rush for him. Harding now thought only of making his own escape. His cornfield offered the only cover at hand, so into it he



SCENE OF HARDING'S EXPLOIT.

plunged, making rapid strides for the creek. But while running at the top of his speed, who should he see but his wife lying prostrate among the corn? Overcome by terror, the poor woman had sunk down helpless, after going only a few rods from the house.

Harding's extraordinary strength was now put to the test. Taking his wife under one arm, and her babe under the other, he dashed on again for the creek, plunged in, waded through mud and water, to the opposite bank, and dived into the woods beyond, while his

baffled pursuers stood looking at him from the shore he had just left.

Harding's faithful dog had followed close at his master's heels. The animal was killed for fear that his barking would betray the route the fugitives had taken. They then plunged deeper into the woods. All that night they lay hid. Late on the next day they reached Storer's garrison, at Wells, weary, footsore, and famishing. It is more than probable that the Indians wished to take Harding alive, or he would hardly have got off so easily. They showed great admiration for his prowess in this affair, often saying, when speaking of him, "Much man Stephen; all same one Indian."

After rifling Harding's house, pulling up his corn, and killing his hogs, the savages crossed the river to William Larrabee's, whose wife and three children were inhumanly butchered, while the husband and father was a horrified witness of the deed from a place where he had concealed himself.

From here they moved two miles farther up the river to Philip Durell's house, at Kennebunk Landing. They found no one at home here but the women and children, Durell himself being absent. When he did get back, at nightfall, it was to a desolate home.<sup>1</sup>

Cape Porpoise, being inhabited by only a few fishermen, was wholly laid waste, and, for the second time in its history, depopulated. Upon the appearance of the enemy at Winter Harbor<sup>2</sup> the inhabitants took refuge in Fort Mary. Here the

<sup>1</sup> BRADBURY, *History of Kennebunkport*, further relates that the Indians carried off, at this time, Mrs. Durell, her two daughters, Susan and Rachel, and two sons, one of whom, Philip, was an infant. The prisoners were taken as far as Pigwacket (Fryburg, Me.) when Mrs. Durell was allowed to go home with her infant. Both daughters married Frenchmen, and refused to return after the war.

<sup>2</sup> THOUGH locally preserved, the name is now merged in that of Biddeford Pool.

attack was repulsed,<sup>1</sup> but that made on the stone fort<sup>2</sup> at the falls, above, was more successful, thirty-five persons being killed or taken there. At Scarborough, the garrison bravely held out until assistance reached them. At Spurwink,<sup>3</sup> a neighborhood of Cape Elizabeth, inhabited almost exclusively by families of the name of Jordan, no less than twenty-two persons of that name were killed or taken. At Purpooduck, another little fishing hamlet of Cape Elizabeth, finding no men at home, the marauders murdered twenty-five and carried off eight of the women and children.

It only remained to dispose of the fort and settlement at Falmouth. The veteran Major John March was then in command of the fort. Stratagem was first resorted to. While the main body of assailants kept out of sight, three chiefs boldly advanced to the gate with a flag of truce. At first, March paid no attention to the flag, but finally went out to meet it, taking with him two others, all three being unarmed. His men were, however, warned to be watchful against treachery. Only a few words had been exchanged, when the Indians drew their hatchets from under their blankets, and fell with fury upon March and his companions. March being a man of great physical strength, succeeded in wresting a hatchet from one of his assailants, with which he kept them off until a file of men came to his rescue. Luckily he escaped with a few slight wounds.

<sup>1</sup> WILLIAMSON, *History of Maine*, following Penhallow, errs in saying that this garrison was taken. It was then commanded by Captain Tutfrey, who writes to Governor Dudley under date of August, 1703, to the above effect. See *Massachusetts Archives*. Under date of August 16th, Dudley wrote to Winthrop, saying that the forts at Saco, Blackpoint, and Casco were assaulted, but were yet safe. *Winthrop Papers*.

<sup>2</sup> THIS fort stood on the river bank, just below the falls, in what is now the Laconia Company's premises.

<sup>3</sup> THE attack here was known in Boston on the 12th.

His less fortunate companions, Phippeny and Kent, both old men, fell under the blows of the other savages. One of his guards was also shot down from an ambush near by, probably placed with the view of rushing into the fort if the attempt to surprise March's party had succeeded.

Having failed to gain the fort by treachery, the savages next fell upon the scattered cabins outside; which were soon blazing on all sides. This done they returned to attack the fort. For six days the weak garrison defended itself unflinchingly. During this time the besiegers were joined by the confederate bands, who had been destroying all before them at the west. Beaubassin, the French leader, now pressed the siege with greater vigor and skill. Covered by the bank on which the fort stood, the savages set to work undermining it on the water side. For two days and nights they steadily wormed their way under the bank toward the palisade without any hindrance from the garrison, and were in a fair way to have carried the fort by assault, when the arrival of the provincial galley compelled them to give over their purpose in a hurry, as that vessel's guns raked their working party. On the following night they decamped. Two hundred canoes were destroyed, and an English shallop retaken by the relieving galley.<sup>1</sup>

One hundred and thirty persons were either killed or taken during this bloody onset. At night the sky was lit up by the fires kindled by the Indians. Maine had nearly received her death-blow. Throughout her en-

<sup>1</sup> JOHN MARCH was a native of Newbury, Mass. He was immediately made a lieutenant-colonel for his gallantry in this affair, the General Court afterward voting him £50, in consideration of his brave defence and the wounds he received.



[1703

Kent,  
ages.  
bush  
into  
had  
  
sav-  
nich  
re-  
gar-  
me  
ds,  
em  
ch  
nd  
od,  
le.  
bir  
y  
to  
e  
r-  
r  
l.  
h

1703]

SIX TERRIBLE DAYS

161

tire border nothing was left standing except a few isolated garrisons, and it was a question if even these could hold out much longer. The deception had been so complete, the onset so sudden, that organized resistance was out of the question. The English, heedless of the signs of the gathering storm, had been lulled into a state of false security, and the awakening was terrible indeed.

## XVII

### THE WAR GROWS IN SAVAGERY

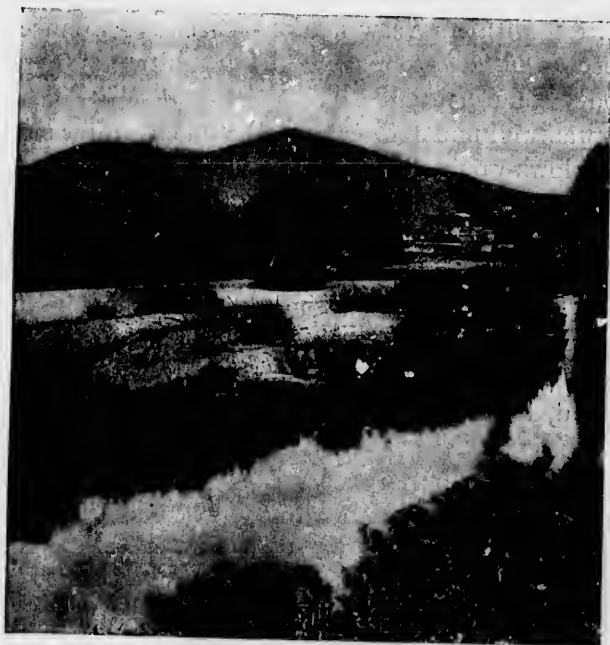
1703

THE preceding chapter closed the record of six terrible days which had left a track of blood for fifty miles along the stricken seaboard of Maine. How fared it with the exposed frontiers of New Hampshire after this new outbreak? We have scarcely patience to continue the sad recital of indiscriminate slaughter, which cast the silence of death over so many desolated hearthstones in this ancient province.

On August 17th a war party, led by Captain Tom, set upon Hampton Village. Five of the inhabitants were killed, one of whom, a widow Mussey, was a noted Friend. They also plundered two houses here before a general alarm brought the people together in sufficient numbers to drive the assailants away.

Fear and dismay now spread on the wings of the wind. It could never be known where the subtle enemy would strike next; hence the widespread alarm which at once turned every man's thoughts to his own means of defence. Little enough could be done where the enemy possessed every advantage—  
**Steps for** particularly that of choosing his own time  
**defence.** and place of attack. Still, the usual measures were resorted to. The people were ordered into the garrisons. Only the most necessary labor was performed, and that

went on under the protection of an armed guard. The women and children were ordered to be sent out of the Maine garrisons to a place of safety. Wadleigh's and Somerby's troops were quartered at Wells to prevent the discouraged inhabitants from deserting the place in



ANCIENT SEAT OF THE PIGWACKETTS, FRYEBURG, ME.

a body ; while a foot company of a hundred men was ordered to man the remaining garrisons there, the horse being designed to keep the roads well scouted and patrolled.

But for these prompt and efficient measures it is doubtful where the panic would have ended.

Dudley had thus met the outbreak firmly. In Au-

gust he was making up a marching force of five hundred men, soon increased to nine hundred, and by September to eleven hundred, half of whom, however, were quartered in garrisons, leaving his disposable force still too small for emergencies. He therefore turned to his neighbors for help, though it must be admitted with no very marked success. Connecticut, indeed, sent a troop into Hampshire County, but Rhode Island held aloof.

It was well understood that the enemy after striking their blows would retreat into their own fastnesses, and Dudley had determined to follow them there.

In October, Colonel March marched at the head of three hundred and sixty men for Pigwacket. Long disuse had so obliterated the old trails that the guides became bewildered and could not find their way, compelling March to return empty-handed. Nothing daunted, Dudley immediately fitted out a second expedition.

All was to no purpose. Long before these forces could be gathered together the enemy had fled beyond reach, and from safe coverts his scouts were no doubt watching the futile efforts of the pursuers as they floundered on through the wooded defiles of the great northern wilderness, where range rises upon range until the great White Hills break upon the sight in all their majesty.

Worse still, while these forces were out the savages, like so many wasps, brushed away for the moment, began their depredations in Maine again. At Black Point, Captain Hunnewell and nineteen more belonging to the garrison there, were waylaid as they were going out to work in the neighboring meadows, and all but

one man either killed or taken.<sup>1</sup> This bloody affair took place on October 6th. Emboldened by their success, by which the force there was greatly weakened, the savages next assaulted the garrison itself. Eight men under Lieutenant Wyatt, with the help of two vessels then lying in the harbor, held out until they were able to make good their retreat on board the vessels, when the triumphant enemy quickly set the fort on fire; and so that link in Dudley's chain of defence was broken apart.

**Black Point  
harried.**

After performing this exploit the Indians renewed their outrages in and about York and Berwick, seemingly intent upon destroying every white settlement in Maine. At York the wife and five children of Arthur Bragdon were slain, and Mrs. Hannah Parsons and her daughter carried into captivity.

It being worse than useless to play at hide and seek with these vigilant foemen, who first showed themselves in one place and then in another, far distant, the authorities persevered in the plan of hunting them down in their own villages. Usually, it was next to impossible for white men to approach them undiscovered, and after long and frightful marches a few deserted wigwams would be all that the disappointed rangers could find. This autumn, however, Colonel March was more fortunate. During a second march to Pigwacket his men killed six Indians, and took six more. That he should have travelled so far to effect so little, or that so trifling a result should be hailed as a great success, is a telling commentary upon the peculiar character of Indian warfare. Nothing more discouraging or more

<sup>1</sup> THE spot where this affair occurred is on Prout's Neck, in Scarborough, and has ever since been known as Massacre Pond.

exasperating can well be imagined, yet there was no help for it.

This success induced the Massachusetts government to offer a bounty of twenty<sup>1</sup> pounds for every Indian scalp, taken by volunteer ranging parties, thus bringing into the conflict the new, and to this later generation repugnant, incentive of private gain. This was treating Indians and wolves alike. It was even more; for thus to authorize the forming of scalping parties was to put those engaging in them on a level with the savages themselves. Yet public feeling had reached a point when no more was thought of killing an Indian than a wolf. Penhallow, who is by no means a bloody-minded writer, says that this bounty prompted some and animated others to "a noble emulation." The Rev. Solomon Stoddard, minister of Northampton, venerated for his virtues, who lived in the midst of hostile alarms, declared that the Indians should be looked upon only as "thieves and murderers," and he proposed hunting them down with dogs "the same as we do bears," as the best and only way of tracking them to their dens.<sup>2</sup> He says, what is quite true, that the same thing had been done with success in Virginia, and goes on to quiet any qualms that might arise on the score of inhumanity by the plea of an inexorable necessity. There is no doubt whatever that he spoke the general opinion. At that very moment his own flock were anxiously discussing the chances of having the Indians come down upon them without a moment's warning. Then again the

<sup>1</sup> HUTCHINSON and others say forty, but the Act of September 7, 1703, now before me, says twenty.

<sup>2</sup> LETTER to Governor Dudley, October 23, 1703. Dr. Dwight says he was held "in a reverence which will scarcely be rendered to any other man."

atrocities of the last war were now freshly recalled with fear and trembling; and where hardly one family could be found, along a wide extent of border, not mourning the loss of a relative or a friend, the morality of any effectual method of retaliation was not likely to be called in question.

It resulted that no less than seven companies of rangers were engaged in scouring the woods for scalps during the winter, under the bounty act—a stroke of policy relieving the authorities of the expense of maintaining an equal force of enlisted men. In their marches these rangers made use of snowshoes, as the Canada Indians had done in their descents, for which reason they were styled Snowshoe  
men. snowshoe men. Thus equipped, they were able to reach the farthest haunts of the savages in the depth of winter, without more fatigue than the same march would have caused them in summer.

One company only succeeded in finding any Indians. This was the one commanded by Colonel William Tyng, of Dunstable, who went to the headquarters of "Old Harry," so-called, at Lake Winnepesaukee, where five Indians, including "Old Harry" himself, were slain.<sup>1</sup>

All could not prevent the daring enemy from molesting the settlers when and how they pleased, and Indian cunning was often more than a match for English wit. Thus, on December 20th, three out of five Saco men, who were bringing home wood, were found slain. Seven more, who were also out of the garrisons, luckily

<sup>1</sup> BESIDES the bounty, the heirs of the actors in this affair were subsequently granted a tract of land at first called "Harry's" Town, then Tyngstown, then Derryfield, and lastly Manchester, N. H.

made their escape to Wells. Shortly after four men belonging to Captain Gallop's sloop were killed at Casco Bay, after landing from their boat.<sup>1</sup> Within a week, a most desperate attempt was made to destroy Berwick,<sup>2</sup> the border town of Maine.

**Berwick assailed.**

It was on the morning of January 28th, when the ground was covered with snow, that a war-party, small in numbers but great in daring, fell suddenly upon Neale's garrison. Fortunately the sentinel discovered their approach in season to give the alarm, but a young girl, and a young man who happened to be at some distance off, had to run for their lives. The girl was quickly overtaken and knocked down with the blow of a tomahawk, but the lad still kept on and had almost reached the garrison when his pursuers, seeing him likely to escape them, fired at and shot him down. Believing him dead, they kept on toward the garrison, and were come close up to it when a well aimed shot from the flanker laid the leader dead on the ground. While his comrades were busy trying to drag the body away, the young man came to himself again, and got safely into the garrison. The assailants then fell upon Smith's garrison, but the inmates there being ready to receive them, they were soon beaten off and one or two of their number wounded. Meantime, the firing had aroused the people at Brown's garrison. Captain Brown, with about a dozen good men, made all the speed he could to the relief of his neighbors. He came upon the Indians as they were engaged in binding up the plunder they had found in some out-houses, bravely ran upon them and put

<sup>1</sup> SEWALL'S *Diary*.

<sup>2</sup> OFTEN called by its Indian name of Newichewannock in the accounts of the time.



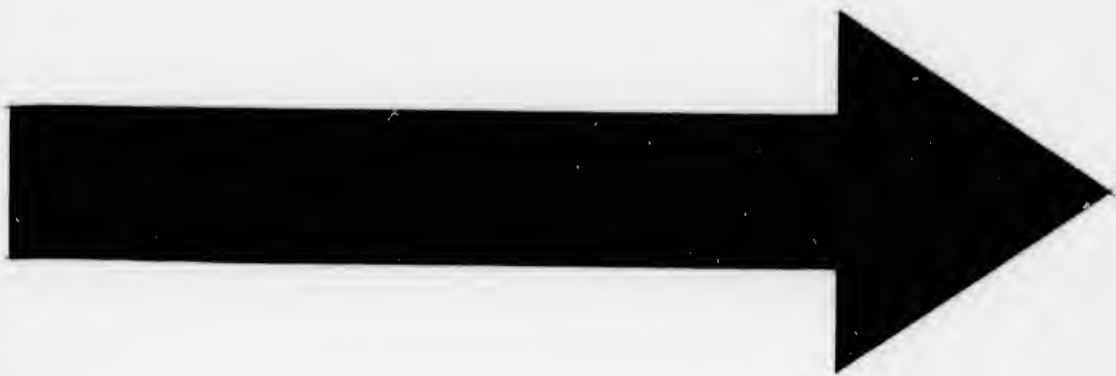
them to flight. Brown's party fired briskly at the fugitives as they ran off through the snow, wounding several, as afterward appeared by the bloody tracks in the snow, and making them leave all their plunder behind, besides some of their own hatchets and blankets. The want of snow-shoes prevented the English from pursuing until the next day. In this raid the savages burned two houses and killed about seventy cattle, besides a good many sheep.<sup>1</sup>

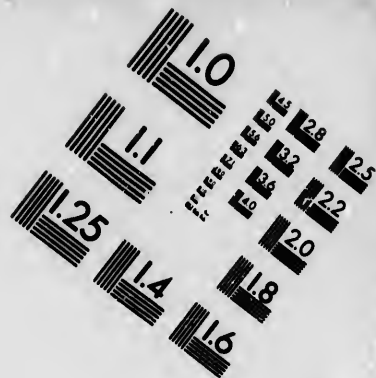
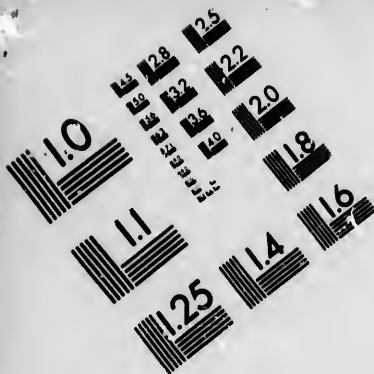
A little later in the season, on February 8th, a small party of the enemy made a more successful descent upon Joseph Bradley's garrison, situated in the northerly part of Haverhill. Here the inmates had gone about their usual employments, so thoughtless of danger that the gates of the garrison were left standing wide open. Bradley's wife, Hannah, who had been made a prisoner at the same time as Mrs. Dustan, was busy stirring a kettle of boiling soap, over the fire, while Jonathan Johnson, a soldier, was loitering about the house, when a small party of savages, rushed in upon them, tomahawk in hand. Mrs. Bradley instantly flung a ladleful of boiling soap into the face of the foremost savage, putting him *hors de combat*, but his companions seized her, killed Johnson on the spot, and hurried the rest of the inmates off into the woods before an alarm could spread to the village.

Thus this heroic woman became for the second time a captive. She was now obliged to travel on foot in the deep snow, carrying a burden that would have been heavy for a strong man to bear, with no other food for days together except some tough scraps of dried skins

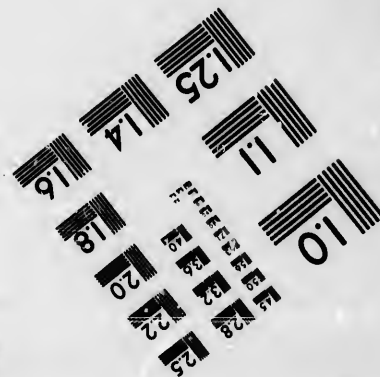
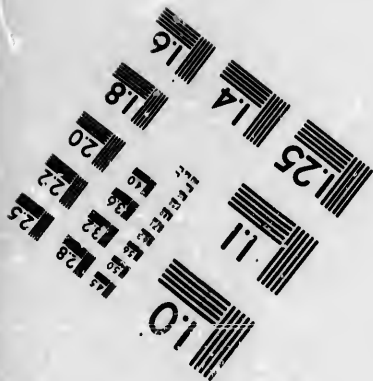
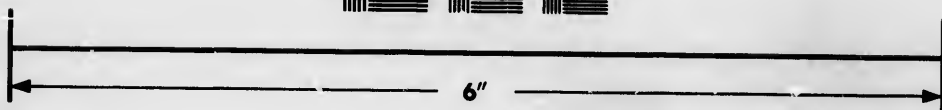
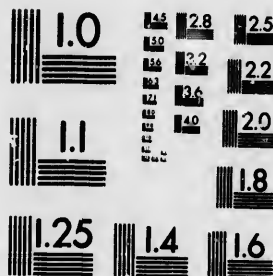
<sup>1</sup> CAPTAIN JOHN MARCH's letter to Governor Dudley, dated the day after the attack; and probably the same affair mentioned by Penhallow, who makes the Indians lose nine killed, though March knew of but one.

Mrs. Bradley  
taken.





**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

0  
E 128  
E 125  
E 122  
E 120  
E 118

10  
15

or a few ground nuts, or the bark of trees, wild onions and lily roots—in fact, the proper sustenance of wild beasts. To heighten her misery, a child was born to her during the long and weary march to Canada. With a mother's devotion, Mrs. Bradley sought to save its life at all risks, but this was next to impossible in the face of such hardships as her condition imposed. Her captors seemed to take a fiendish delight in torturing the hapless little waif of the wilderness, and at length put it to death by throwing hot embers into its mouth to stop its crying.<sup>1</sup>

During this winter Massachusetts and New Hampshire together had 890 men in service, New Hampshire turning out every fourth man fit for military duty. The exigencies of the times called for the most arduous labors on the part of the civil authorities, whose sessions often reached far into the night. Communication was painfully slow. What can now be done in a few minutes then required as many hours, days even. The startling words "Haste! post-haste!" affixed to the cover of an important despatch, shows, at most, a rider galloping up hill and down at the top of his speed. Relays could not always be arranged for in advance. There were no bridges over the great rivers. A drowsy ferryman, knocked up in the middle of the night, would not be apt to hurry himself overmuch. Arrived at his destination, his despatch delivered, the courier would snatch a few hours' sleep, while the orders were being got ready for his return. This was the day of alarm guns, beacons and bonfires. Yet death moved as swiftly then as now.

<sup>1</sup> MRS. BRADLEY was sold to the French, and redeemed by her husband in the spring of 1705.

Late in January, as the council was breaking up at Boston, Colonel Schuyler walked into the chamber, accompanied by a young man of soldierly port, known to a few there as Colonel Samuel Vetch. Few thought of him as destined to play so conspicuous a part in the near future as subsequently **Samuel Vetch.** turned out to be the case. Yet Vetch was no less destined to make his mark in these unquiet times, because they were exactly suited to his genius and his ambition. And in the years to come Vetch was sure to appear in every important crisis.

Vetch is first heard of as one of the survivors of the memorable Darien colony of 1688-89, he being then a young Scotch captain attached to that ill-fated and ill-conceived expedition. From Darien Vetch came to New York, where his energetic character and natural abilities soon won for him friends and social position, as is evinced by his marrying into the Livingston family soon after.<sup>1</sup> Never very scrupulous, he seems easily to have fallen into the loose notions, too prevalent among a certain class of merchants of that day, for we presently find him charged with carrying on an illicit trade with Canada. He is next heard of in Boston, seeking employment in the wars.

<sup>1</sup> He married the daughter of Robert Livingston.

## XVIII

### THE SACKING OF DEERFIELD

February 28, 1704

HAVING struck a benumbing blow at the sea-coast settlements of Maine, and thrown all that frontier into a state of unspeakable terror and confusion, and while the colonial forces, hurried to that quarter, were vainly scouring the woods in pursuit of the insolent raiders, the enemy was getting ready to repeat the blow at a point so remote that little preparation had been made to receive it.

The village of Deerfield, the frontier settlement of the Connecticut Valley, had been singled out for swift destruction.

As the outpost covering all of the settlements lower down the valley, it was important to hold it at all hazards, since their safety demanded that the enemy should be met and checked at the threshold.

Moreover, as this group of thriving settlements was practically isolated from the sea-coast, but within supporting distance of the river towns of Connecticut colony, Dudley saw that help should come from there in case of need. Nothing, in short, could be plainer. Besides, these half dozen towns which were the object of Dudley's warm solicitude, actually covered Connecticut from invasion. This also was undeniable. Dudley pressed these facts home upon

Connecticut  
Valley.

Governor Winthrop <sup>1</sup> with considerable warmth, until a sort of tacit understanding was reached that Connecticut should aid in defending that part of the valley in question, upon the appearance of danger.<sup>2</sup>

Dudley, who had so many irons in the fire, was compelled to be satisfied with these half measures, simply because he could do no better. He knew—everybody knew—that to repel an Indian attack forces must be on the spot, not at a distance. The moral effect, however, was good. Including the promised aid, there were in the four towns of Northampton, Hadley, Hatfield, and Deerfield about five hundred fighting men. By adding Springfield, the whole valley probably could muster at least six hundred and fifty men.<sup>3</sup> But not more than half of these could be put in the field without leaving the towns to which they belonged unguarded, and that was not to be thought of.

The physical defences were of the rudest kind.

Some years before, all or most of the houses in Deerfield had been enclosed by a stout timber stockade; but with the growth of the place, both old and new settlers were forced to build outside, where their farms lay.<sup>4</sup> Inside and out, there were forty houses, or, as some say, forty-one. Warned by the kidnapping of two persons belonging there that Indians

<sup>1</sup> USUALLY called Fitz-John, the prefix being used to distinguish him from his father and grandfather, John Winthrop.

<sup>2</sup> THE correspondence between the two governors on this head is in the *Winthrop Papers*.

<sup>3</sup> ACCORDING to a report made by Colonel Samuel Partridge, who had military charge over the valley settlements, Hatfield had 100 men of its own, Hadley the same number, Northampton 150, and Deerfield 25 just after the raid. Springfield is omitted from the list. Adding the sixty from Connecticut, and allowing Deerfield only the same number as Hatfield, the six towns could muster not less than 650 fighting men.

<sup>4</sup> LETTER of Rev. John Williams to Governor Dudley. *Massachusetts Archives*.



were lurking near them, aware that their village was greatly exposed to attack, the alarmed settlers had now taken refuge inside the stockade, where they were overcrowded, restless, discontented, and as time wore on without anything further occurring to excite their fears, too much disposed to regard the whole affair as a false alarm.

Most of the old stockade having rotted away, it was dangerous to let it remain in that condition, and also dangerous to go into the woods after the timber to renew it. In fact, the imperilled settlers hardly knew which way to turn. They were afraid to remain, yet forbidden to remove. Many were on the point of leaving, probably some did leave, but as their fears abated, pride or a careful eye to their own, kept them mostly steady at the post of duty. This was the situation in the autumn of 1703.

Meantime, Colonel Schuyler of Albany had learned from some friendly Mohawks, who were returning from a visit to their Canada relations, that an attack on Deerfield was actually in preparation. Schuyler lost no time in notifying Governor Dudley. In the valley the news caused a panic. All occupations save those of watching and scouting were laid aside. The Connecticut horse came up at a gallop. But as time wore on and no enemy appeared, the panic subsided. Like the old cry of "wolf!" it failed, at last, to arouse even a languid interest. So the autumn passed away and the long winter set in.

It was in the depth of winter, and the snow lay deep along the peaceful valley, and high up the rugged mountain sides. The river, now solidly frozen over, formed an ice-bridge from bank to bank. The near-

est village lay some miles below. There was little for the husbandman to do, except to watch the slow lengthening of the days, as the morning sun climbed the eastern hills, or note his brilliant setting behind the darkening mountains on the west. So he woke, and dozed and slept again without care and without fear.

But while these settlers were thus resting in the most profound security, all unknown to them the Governor of Canada was launching one of his murderous expeditions against them. The his-  
Rouville's war-party.  
 torian, Charlevoix, says it consisted of two hundred and fifty men, commanded by Hertel de Rouville; other writers place the numbers much higher. It matters little; there were enough and more than enough for the terrible work cut out for them here. Perhaps the Jesuit historian forgot to include the Indians who joined De Rouville later.

It was a frightful march to look forward to; though in some respects, perhaps not so difficult as if made at a different season of the year, the party being equipped with snow-shoes, on which they could move with ease and rapidity over the frozen crust. Streams could be passed on the ice; swamps were no longer to be avoided; rough or broken ground offered no hindrance. Yet was the march long and painful. At each halting-place, sheltered only from the cutting blasts by burying themselves in the depths of the forest, these hardy rangers would scrape out shallow burrows in the snow, in which they lay huddled together around a few fagots, like so many shaggy dogs, until roused to begin the march again. And like dogs they would have only to shake themselves to be ready. The bearded Canadian and the painted

savage shared this wretched bivouac together, spurred on by the thirst for booty and slaughter.

This winter of 1703-4 was one of unusual severity. The cold was intense. Indeed, the elements themselves seem to have conspired against this lonely outpost among the mountains. Cold had bridged the streams; had smoothed the way over the deep snows, which in falling had so drifted up against the stockade as to make scaling it in one or more places from the outside an easy matter. Yet, instead of redoubling their vigilance, the heedless settlers seem to have thought the severity of the weather their greatest safeguard.

One man only could not shake off the feeling of impending danger. This was John Williams, minister of

Rev. John  
Williams.

Deerfield, a man of much force of character, learning and piety. So strongly had the presentiment of evil taken possession of him, that he preached it in his sermons. Finding this time thrown away, he applied for and obtained a reinforcement of twenty soldiers just four days before the murderous assault, about to be related, took place. Williams was now undoubtedly easier in his mind, thinking that a more strict watch would be kept. There were wooden watch-towers, called flankers, set up along the stockade, in which the sentinels took up their posts at nightfall, remaining till daybreak. The night of Monday, February 28th, came.

At the hour when the mothers of Deerfield were hushing their little ones to sleep, little dreaming it was to be that sleep from which there is no waking, De Rouville's cut-throats were going into bivouac, only two miles from the village. Not daring to light fires, they shivered through the long hours as best they

could, while warmth and comfort reigned in the happy homes so soon to be made desolate.

Finding all quiet, shortly after midnight De Rouville aroused his men for the assault.

Like shadows they stole out of the woods, where they had lain huddled together for warmth. As the crust had grown hard enough to bear a man's weight, snow-shoes were left behind. Great caution was taken in approaching the stockade. There were frequent halts to listen. It was needless. The faithless guards had left their posts, and the sleeping village lay wholly at the mercy of the invaders.

It was about two hours before day when Rouville's vanguard approached the stockade, unseen and unchallenged. Quick to act, the foremost assailants lightly mounted over the snowdrifts, let themselves drop down on the inside, and ran to unbar the gate to their companions, who rushed into the stockade, screeching and yelling like so many fiends incarnate. They then scattered themselves right and left, so as to let none escape, and the work of slaughter began. Savage onset.

The pen is powerless to portray the fright and bewilderment of that moment. To the suddenly awakened inhabitants it must have seemed like the dawning of the Judgment Day.

The experience of one was the experience of all, and Mr. Williams has told his own in a most graphic way.<sup>1</sup> His house was one of the very first to be attacked. Leaping out of bed in his shirt, Williams ran for the door, just as the Indians had forced their way in. Two

<sup>1</sup> In *The Redeemed Captive Returning to Zion*, of which many editions have been printed.

soldiers lodged with him. Shouting to them to get up, Williams darted back to his bedside for his pistol, snatched it up, levelled it at the foremost Indian as he was entering the room, and pulled the trigger. Luckily for Williams it missed fire, or his life, probably, would have paid the forfeit on the instant. He was instantly seized, disarmed and bound, and kept standing for near an hour in the cold, without a rag of clothes on except his shirt. Meantime, two of his young children, with his negro woman, were dragged to the door and despatched; while Mrs. Williams, brutally turned out of a sick bed, with five more of her children, was reserved to share her husband's captivity. The house was then ransacked from top to bottom.

While the Indians were thus employed, John Stoddard, one of the two soldiers who lodged with Williams that night, was aroused by the uproar. Only one avenue of escape was open to him, and of that he hastened to avail himself. It was the work of a moment to jump out of bed, throw up the window, leap to the ground, and make for the river, over the snow, all undressed and in his bare feet. The snow was three feet deep, and the nearest settlement several miles away. At the moment of making his hasty exit he had the presence of mind to snatch up his cloak. This was quickly torn into strips and wrapped around his benumbed feet, sandal-wise. In this wretched plight he continued his flight to Hatfield, where he arrived more dead than alive, to give an account of the bloody work going on above.

Ensign John Sheldon's house stood near the northwest angle of the stockade. It was well for him that

he was not at home. Mrs. Sheldon was startled from a sound sleep by the din of blows, raining down against her door. The poor woman could only sit up in bed and listen in an agony of terror and suspense. The door, being barred, resisted every effort made to force it. Failing in this, the assailants then set to work **Sheldon's house** chopping a **pillaged.** hole with their axes, and when they had succeeded in doing so, a savage put his eye to it and peered in. Someone was seen stirring in the dim light within. Instantly a musket was thrust in and fired.<sup>1</sup> The fatal bullet struck poor Mrs. Sheldon, as she was in the act of rising from her bed, and she fell back upon it a corpse.



DOOR OF SHELDON HOUSE, WITH MARKS OF AXES.

Meantime, her son John and his wife Hannah, who slept upstairs, and were also awakened by the tumult, sought to escape by jumping out of the window. The snow broke the force of the fall somewhat. Young Sheldon quickly scrambled to his feet unhurt, and made for the woods, which he fortunately gained, and by

<sup>1</sup> THE house was torn down in 1848, but the door is still preserved in the museum at Deerfield.

keeping well under cover succeeded in reaching the village below, spreading the alarm as he went. His wife, less fortunate, sprained her ankle in the fall, and being thus disabled, the marauders soon laid hands upon her.

This house was one of two left standing inside the stockade, besides the meeting-house. All the rest were set on fire, to burn along with the ghastly evidences of the morning's work. Death, in its most terrible form, thus overtook many who, to escape the tomahawk, had hid themselves in their cellars, only to be stifled beneath the ruins of their burning dwellings. When all was over, forty-seven of the unresisting inhabitants lay dead in or around their own homes. A hundred and twelve more, half dead with cold and fright, were crowded into the Sheldon house, spared for the time being for their reception.<sup>1</sup>

The only resistance that the marauders seem to have met with came from the house of Benoni Stebbins, just mentioned, in which seven brave men and a few courageous women successfully defended themselves during all the time that the carnage raged fiercest around them. Mr. Williams, himself an eye-witness of the determined efforts to capture this house, saw the same Indian whom he had failed to shoot shortly before, shot dead from it. Although the gallant Stebbins had fallen, and two of his brave companions were badly wounded, in spite of coaxing, promises, or threats, to all of which the heroic defenders turned a deaf ear, this one house continued to stand firm as a rock in the midst of the storm of fire and blood surging

<sup>1</sup> COLONEL WHITING puts the loss at 49 killed, and nearly 100 taken. *Letter to Governor Winthrop.* Secretary Addington to Winthrop says 57 killed to 90 captives.—*Winthrop Papers.*

round it long after the enemy were masters of the rest of the village.

It was somewhere about eight o'clock<sup>1</sup> when the enemy's main body moved off toward their last camp, guarding their long train of captives, and loaded down



ENSIGN SHELDON'S HOUSE, DEERFIELD, MASS.

with booty. After passing the river a halt was made to recover their packs, as well as to prepare the prisoners for the long march before them, by making them take off their own shoes and put on Indian mocassins brought for the purpose. Not all the marauders, however, had

<sup>1</sup> ACCOUNTS vary ; some make it earlier, some later.



marched off with their elated companions. A certain number of stragglers lagged behind, looking for plunder among the smoking ruins. Rouville dared not delay his retreat longer, well knowing that the country below would soon be up in arms. In fact, the glare of the burning buildings had been seen far down the snow-bound valley, spreading its tale of blood before it in the heavens, and calling every able-bodied man to the rescue. Among others some sixty mounted men from Hatfield were early on the road, but the snow was deep and the pace slow.

But the first to reach the ground were some scattered settlers, or fugitives, who rallied at the stockade of Jonathan Wells, situated at the lower end of the village, until some thirty or more eager and determined men had collected there, ready for action, when, under the lead of Wells, they charged on into the stockade, driving out the enemy's stragglers and rescuing the living inmates of the Stebbins house, which was still hard beset. Indeed, they were reduced to the very last extremity when this timely aid appeared on the scene.<sup>1</sup> The women and children who had been cooped up there instantly ran back to Captain Wells's garrison, while the men joined their rescuers in hot pursuit of the retreating enemy.

The pursuit was kept up for a mile and a half through the meadows, the exasperated English even throwing off hats and coats in their eagerness to overtake the fugitives. Wells, more prudent, vainly halloed to them to halt. They were too much carried away by the chase to hear him.

<sup>1</sup> It took fire while its valiant defenders were fighting in the meadows, and was burned to the ground with its contents.

All at once a rapid discharge of musketry scattered them in confusion. They had run headlong into an ambushade which Rouville had cunningly laid for them, upon hearing the firing. A swarm of infuriated savages now sallied out upon the little band of reckless white men, who, breathless with their previous exertions, sought safety in flight, keeping up a running fight, however, until the protection of the palisade was gained, when Rouville, satisfied with having cooled the ardor of his would-be pursuers, resumed his march the way he came. Nine of the English and five of the enemy fell in this rash encounter.

By midnight eighty well-armed, resolute men were assembled at Deerfield. Word was brought in by an escaped prisoner that the enemy had encamped not more than five miles off. By two o'clock of the next day the Connecticut men began to come in, when the question of making a further pursuit was put to a vote and decided in the negative, as being a thing too hazardous to attempt without snow-shoes, the snow being so deep that the pursuers would have to travel in the enemy's track, exposed to being flanked or ambushed at every step.

Much fault was found with the failure to pursue, and there can be little doubt that the check sustained on the previous day had something to do with it. Dudley gave vent to his disgust in his usual emphatic way. "I am oppressed," he declares, "with the remembrance of my sleepy neighbors at Deerfield, and all that came to their assistance, could not make out snow-shoes enough to follow a drunk, loaden, tyred enemy of whom they might have been masters to their honor."

Words fail to describe the horrors of that dreadful

march as day by day the wretched prisoners toiled on through the deep snows or up the steep mountain sides, staggering beneath the weight of their burdens. To fall behind was certain death. One blow of the tomahawk put a speedy end to the sufferings of those who failed to keep up with the rest. Poor Mrs. Williams was one of the first to meet this fate<sup>1</sup> at the hands of her inhuman master, while her anxious husband, after being roughly refused the privilege of helping his wife up a steep ascent, was vainly waiting for her at the van of the forlorn procession.<sup>2</sup>

At West River, sledges had been left, to which the wounded and young children were now transferred, thus enabling the marauders to move on more expeditiously. At White River, fears of a pursuit having abated, they separated into smaller parties, the better to subsist by hunting. Part kept on up the Connecticut, part struck off into the valley of White River, and across the Green Mountains to Lake Champlain. With these went Williams. Once, when his savage master roused him to begin the day's march, Williams found his feet so swollen and bruised that he could hardly stand erect. In vain he pleaded his inability to keep up the killing pace his master required. The savage significantly fingered the

<sup>1</sup> HER body was recovered, and her grave may still be seen in the old graveyard at Deerfield.

<sup>2</sup> HUTCHINSON, II., 123, strangely defends the murder of these helpless prisoners, as an act necessary to the safety of the captors. But this sort of reasoning would as easily justify the slaughter of prisoners by civilized as by uncivilized combatants. As a matter of fact, under the savage code, a prisoner ceased to have any rights whatever. His captor might kill or keep him, just as he saw fit. Enough were killed to glut his thirst for blood, and enough were left alive to satisfy his avarice. Nineteen persons were thus sacrificed during the retreat.

tomahawk in his belt, and Williams found his strength wonderfully revived by the threat of instant death. After forty days passed in the wilderness, the weak, haggard, and footsore captive reached the French fort at Chambly, bowed down under the most acute distress of mind and body, having been separated from his children, of whose fate he was wholly ignorant.

After suffering untold hardships, the surviving captives straggled into the Indian villages on the St. Lawrence. Some sixty were eventually restored to their friends, a few at a time, either by ransom or exchange. By a sort of irony Williams, himself, was exchanged for a noted freebooter, called Baptiste, October, 1706. Eunice, his ten-year-old daughter, was adopted by the Caughnawaga tribe, embraced the Catholic faith, and eventually married a full-blooded Caughnawaga Indian named Amrusus, who thenceforth appears to have taken his wife's family name of Williams. From this marriage came a grandson, Eleazer Williams, who achieved considerable notoriety rather more than a generation ago by pretending to be the son of Louis XVI. Eleazer, however, became a Protestant, and in 1822 went to establish an Episcopal mission among the Menomonees and Winnebagoes at Green Bay, Wis., where he was married to Miss Madeline Jourdain of that place.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> I FIND the following memorandum concerning him among my fathers MSS. "Williams came to Boston several times and used to visit me. He was short and stout and spoke with a strong French accent. His errand was begging, in which he had pretty good success. His figure was not unlike that represented in the prints of Louis XVI., hence somebody started the ridiculous story that he was the dauphin of that king. Williams himself was evidently willing that people should believe the story. He said to me, in conversation, 'that he could say nothing about it, as he knew nothing, but that there were strange and unaccountable things in the story, especially respecting a scar on his person, which agreed with a similar one on that of the dauphin.' Williams died at Hogsburg, N. Y., August 28, 1868."—See the Appendix to Dr. S. W. Williams's edition (1863) of *The Redeemed Captive*.

One feature of this raid, related by Penhallow, is worthy of mention, if true, if only for its singularity. He says that some of our captives, then in Canada, who knew that this expedition of Rouville's was on foot, took advantage of it to send letters to their friends, the bag in which they were carefully put being afterward found hanging to the limb of a tree in the highway. And he adds that these letters gave comforting intelligence to those who before were ignorant whether their friends were living or dead.<sup>1</sup>

Charlevoix puts Rouville's loss at only three Frenchmen, and a few savages (as if their losses were of small account); but adds that Rouville himself was wounded. Others make the number forty or fifty, judging from the dead bodies seen before the enemy had time to hide them under the ice of the river.

<sup>1</sup> PENEHALLOW's account seems to differ little from the others. He says he had it from the Rev. Mr. (Solomon) Stoddard, minister of Northampton, Mass., who was not likely to have been misinformed as to leading facts. Much valuable information is contained in the *Winthrop Papers*, which were not accessible to earlier writers. Through Hoyt's and Sheldon's histories of Deerfield, the sacking of that place has become one of the best known chapters of local history.

ow, is  
arity.  
, who  
foot,  
, the  
ward  
away.  
intel-  
their

nch-  
small  
ded.  
the  
hide

had it  
as not  
le con-  
riters.  
as be-

## XIX

### THE ENEMY CUTS OFF BOTH ENDS OF THE LINE

1704

THE tragedy of Deerfield sent a thrill of horror into every New England hamlet and home. What might not the daring enemy next attempt?

After the first shock was over, the authorities bestirred themselves to guard against a repetition of such disasters. This was something like shutting the stable-door after the horse had escaped. Bitterly was the parsimonious policy condemned that had laid the whole valley open to attack. But it was now too late to indulge in vain regrets. The enemy must first be reckoned with.

Unfortunately there was no longer that concert of action that had existed under the old confederacy of the New England colonies, by means of which the forces to be furnished by each in time of war were duly apportioned. Old feuds and old dislikes prevented any cordial understanding with Rhode Island. Winthrop, of Connecticut, seems to have made up his mind to do just enough to save himself from the charge of indifference, and no more, let the demand be ever so pressing.<sup>1</sup> But Deerfield seems to have stirred even his sluggish blood somewhat. In April he sent off sixty troopers to be posted at Hatfield until further orders. As re-

<sup>1</sup> SEE the correspondence in the *Winthrop Papers*.

gards the eastern frontier, Dudley now succeeded in obtaining a hundred Pequots, Mohegans, and Niantics, wards of Connecticut, to serve on that exposed front, on the theory that Indians could be pitted against Indians with advantage. He had first meant to post them at



GLIMPSE OF LAKE WINNIPESAUKEE.

the foot of Lake Winnepesaukee, as a cover to the New Hampshire settlements, but had finally yielded to their fears of being cut off there, and had left them posted at Berwick instead. These Indians were under the command of Major Samuel Mason, of Stonington. They

were furnished with subsistence by Massachusetts, and a *per diem* allowance of twelve pence by Connecticut, but were actually volunteers, or more accurately speaking, guerrillas. In this employment of those fragments of tribes, whom the English had once crushed with iron hand, against their own race, the moralist of to-day might find food for reflection, but the exigencies of those times were such as to require the prompt use of every available weapon within reach, regardless of what posterity might say.

These arrangements enabled Dudley to withdraw an equal number of men for the expedition, now fitting out under Church, without weakening too much the vulnerable points of the frontier. That expedition will be treated of in another chapter.

But all could not prevent the skulking foe from striking at both points, so carefully guarded, at nearly the same time. They first broke in at the weak eastern corner, just out of reach of Dudley's Indian contingent. On May 11, 1704, as Nicholas Cole, of Wells, with Nicholas Hodgdon, Thomas Dane, and Benjamin Gooch, all three soldiers belonging to Wheelwright's garrison, were out looking for some stray cattle, they were attacked by a party of twelve Indians, who killed Cole and Hodgdon, took Dane prisoner, but failed to secure Gooch, who made his escape to the garrison. A party immediately set out in pursuit of the marauders, but failed to come up with them.<sup>1</sup>

Wells men  
killed.

At the extreme western corner of the line a war-party of French and Indians, eluding the vigilance of the scouts, surprised a garrison in the lower part of North-

<sup>1</sup> *Boston News Letter*, May 15 to 17, 1704, where Gooch is called Gough, probably owing to the habit of pronouncing it as if spelled Googe to this day.



ampton,<sup>1</sup> May 13th, before day, killing or taking all the inmates. In all twenty persons were slain. After retreating for some distance, the raiders sent back a wounded prisoner to warn his friends that if they followed in pursuit the rest of the prisoners would be instantly despatched. The unfortunate messenger was met on the road, alone and unarmed, and slain by Indian stragglers. Colonel Whiting chased this party for two days without coming up with them—"a weary march to no purpose," sighs Samuel Partridge.

The people of Hatfield were aghast at the audacity of the thing. Partridge writes: "We are so surprised that we day and night stand upon our guard, and most of our men keep watch every other night, and spend our whole time in the day fortifying, so as to be in a posture of defence."

Meanwhile, trustworthy intelligence had reached the valley to the effect that the enemy was building a fort and planting corn at a place high up the river, called in the Indian dialect Cowass or Cowassuc,<sup>2</sup> and now known as the Great Connecticut Oxbow.

If true, this piece of news boded no good to the English settlements below. But, first of all, it was necessary to know whether it was true or not.

To this end, a scouting-party of six was sent out from Northampton early in June to clear the mystery up. After a fatiguing tramp of nine days through the wilderness they came to the river not far from the supposed site of the fort. While debating what move to make next two Indians came in sight paddling a canoe.

<sup>1</sup> THEN called Passacomuc, now Easthampton.

<sup>2</sup> BETWEEN the towns of Haverhill, N. H., and Newbury, Vt.

This was taken as a sign that they were on the right scent. Until sunset they lay close. As it grew dark, smoke was seen curling up above the tree-tops about half a mile off. With all the Lyman's exploit. care requisite to conceal their approach, it was two o'clock in the morning before the assailants could reach the spot aimed at, when it was found that the smoke had come from a wigwam which stood in plain view a few rods before them. While hesitating how to approach it without waking the inmates, rain began falling, and presently a "smart clap of thunder" sent, as the pious narrator<sup>1</sup> relates, by "God and his good providence," drowned the noise made by the assailants in forcing their way through the surrounding thickets. Then, after creeping on their hands and knees to within three or four rods of the wigwam, the eager scouts rose to their feet, ran up and fired a volley into it, instantly flinging down their empty guns and rushing in upon the astonished savages to finish the work with clubs and hatchets.

Two escaped; seven were killed on the spot. Six were scalped, the victors leaving the seventh unscalped at the ironical suggestion of one of their number, who said that inasmuch as they now had a scalp apiece, they could well afford to give one to the country.

Not venturing to remain longer in the vicinity, the scouts immediately made the best of their way home, without, however, obtaining the information they had come for. Being in constant fear of pursuit, they were nearly starved to death before reaching the settlements, having eaten nothing for four or five days except young

<sup>1</sup> CALEB LYMAN'S account in Penhallow.

buds, strawberry leaves, and even grass, to alleviate the pangs of hunger.

The actors in this bold exploit bitterly complained because they received only thirty-one pounds reward from the government, when, in fact, the scalp bounty had risen by this time to thirty-two pounds a head in Massachusetts, to which New Hampshire added enough to make the whole bounty forty pounds. Dudley wrote that he had 1,900 men and twenty vessels in service at this time. The people were loudly groaning under the burden of taxation, which this state of things imposed. If, therefore, as was claimed, every Indian killed by the regular forces cost a thousand pounds, the payment of forty pounds to a volunteer who took a scalp without expense to the government would, of course, be looked upon as an economical measure from every point of view. And the mutilation of a dead body was considered essential to establish the equity of a claim to the bounty—nothing more.

## XX

## CHURCH'S LAST EXPEDITION

May, 1704

THE tragedy of Deerfield so stirred the blood of the veteran Church that, although now grown corpulent and getting on in years, he mounted his horse and rode seventy miles to Boston to offer his services to Governor Dudley again. After some exchange of views as to the proper method of crippling the enemy, which Church always insisted could only be done by carrying the war to their own doors, he was put in command of a new expedition, designed to make a clean sweep of the coasts of eastern Maine and Nova Scotia. This done, he was directed to pay a visit to Norridgewock on his return, should it be found practicable to do so, and lay waste that standing menace to the peace of the Maine frontier. Governor Dudley would not sanction an attack on Port Royal, though Church strongly desired to destroy that nest of contraband traders, among whom, it was whispered, some New England merchants might be found, base enough to turn the enemy's wants for carrying on the war against them to their own profit.

CHURCH'S  
SWORD.

While these preparations were on foot, in the month

of April, 1704, there appeared in Boston the first number of the first newspaper published in the English colonies, *The Boston News Letter*.<sup>1</sup> Strangely enough this diminutive sheet, not larger than a modern handbill, contains no reference whatever to the war then raging, or for that matter to anything else that should stamp it as the destined progenitor of the great newspaper of the present day. Indeed, the history of that period could never be written from the columns of the *News Letter* alone.

With his usual activity, Church soon succeeded in raising a mixed force of English and friendly Indians, chiefly in old Plymouth colony, to the number of five hundred and fifty men, a few Indians being allotted to each company of whites. Church boasted that there was not a pressed man among them. Like the previous ones, this expedition was provided with enough whaleboats to move half the command against any given point at once. Celerity and secrecy of movement were thus secured. Two armed vessels of the royal navy, and one sailing under the province flag, were to act as a convoy to Church's fleet of transports.

**Queen's arms.**

In short, the expedition in all respects was as well, if not better, equipped as any that had been sent out on the same errand. One step in advance may be noted here. A certain number of improved muskets, recently imported, were distributed among the new levies, and thus came to be known as Queen's Arms. Dudley had certainly acted with vigor, and Church had seconded his superior to the best of his ability.

<sup>1</sup> A SINGLE number, of a similar sheet, had been issued nearly fourteen years before (September 25, 1690), under the title of *Public Occurrences*, but summarily suppressed for circulating "doubtful and uncertain reports." The matter is largely made up of news of the war then raging.

In the main, the same old programme was marked out for this expedition. Church was too old a cam-



ANCIENT CHART OF PENOBSCOT BAY.

paigner not to know that the prospect of coming upon the hostile Indians unawares was poor indeed. Burning their deserted wigwams might be compared with

burning so much old brushwood. They were almost as easily rebuilt as destroyed; and it was too early in the season to lay waste the Indian cornfields. Church therefore had proposed to himself the rooting out of as many of the French trading and fishing stations of Nova Scotia as he should have the time to visit, satisfied in his own mind, as he was, that it was there he could do the enemy the most harm. It being impracticable to reach Canada, he argued that the next best thing to do was to strike where the enemy was most vulnerable—that is through Nova Scotia. This was rude strategy, to be sure, but it was the only means left of making reprisals for such murderous raids as that of Hertel de Rouville.

After seeing his fleet under sail, Church accompanied Governor Dudley to Portsmouth, where a company of New Hampshire soldiers reinforced the expedition. Leaving the ships of war behind as a blind, on May 15th the transports made sail direct for Matinicus Island,<sup>1</sup> where active operations may be said to have begun.

Next day a small party, sent off on a scout to the nearest group of islands,<sup>2</sup> was lucky enough to capture three Frenchmen and an Indian, before they could make good their escape, from whom, under threats of torture, Church obtained some reliable information as to the numbers and positions of the enemy in this quarter. He then pretended to relent. In gratitude for having their lives spared, two of the prisoners piloted Church to several small habitations of the French in Penobscot Bay, that of St. Castin among the rest. St. Castin,

<sup>1</sup> MATINICUS lies out in the open ocean, seventeen miles southeast of Owl's Head; the lonely outpost of Penobscot Bay.

<sup>2</sup> GREEN ISLANDS of the Fox Islands group are probably meant.

himself, was luckily gone to France, but his wife and children fell into Church's hands. All of the enemy met with here, whether French or Indians, were either killed or taken, though the actual numbers are unknown.

Mount Desert was next visited. On the way there every nook and corner of the coast was thoroughly explored, every possible precaution taken to waylay any

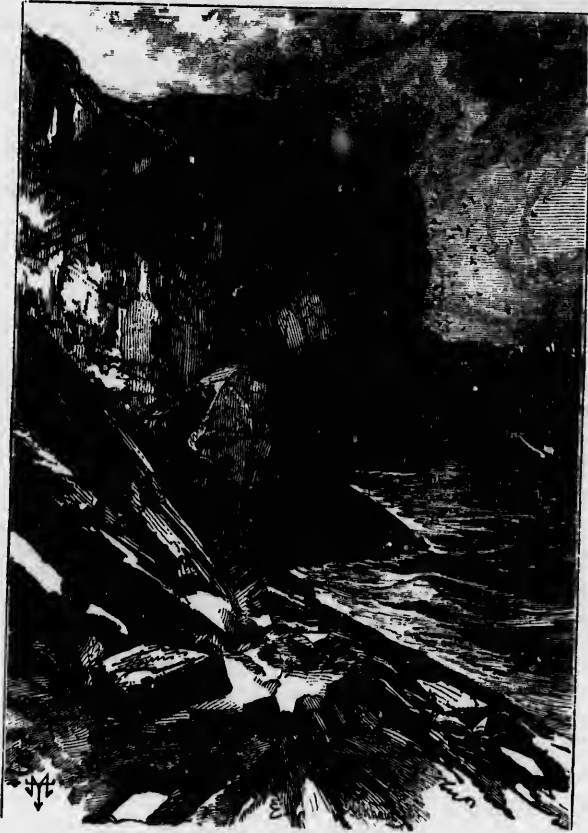


ENTRANCE TO MOUNT DESERT HARBOR.

of the enemy's war-parties who might be coming westward on one of their destructive raids, and for whom Church was now so sharply on the lookout. Failing to make any discoveries of this nature, Church's flotilla rowed on into what is now the Southwest Harbor of Mount Desert, a primeval solitude of wild sublimity, suddenly turned into a scene of unwonted activity by the presence of the ships-of-war and transports, lying there at anchor.



The expedition had now traversed something like fifty leagues of coast without effecting anything of consequence, while the labor involved in making these



AT MOUNT DESERT ISLAND.

night excursions was excessively arduous, the men being either constantly at the oars or kept scrambling over rocks and through thickets, loaded down with their arms and packs. Still Church would not be disheart-

ened. After taking some provisions out of the transports, he once more set his face eastward, leaving the ships to follow him later, while he resumed his careful examinations along shore, as one wild headland opened upon another before him. Machias Bay was thus reached and explored from top to bottom, but even in this noted rendezvous of the redskins neither tracks nor fires were discovered. The place was wholly deserted. So again, Church pushed on into Passamaquoddy Bay, where he had been constantly told he would find plenty of Indians; so that here, at least, he had hopes of effecting something that should redound to the credit of the expedition.

The first landing in this fine bay was made upon the island where Eastport stands to-day, June 7, 1704. One or two French families, probably At Eastport,  
Me. petty traders, were then living on this island. Church forthwith seized and questioned them closely; and upon the strength of a story invented by an old woman on the spot to mislead him, to the effect that there were Indians lurking in the woods about them, Colonel Gorham was left here to look after them, while Major Hilton crossed the bay to scour Campobello Island. With the rest of his force Church then pushed on up the bay, the same night, coolly braving the perils of whirlpools or tidal eddies that make the passage difficult enough in the daytime, but seldom attempted at night even by the best pilots. But Church knew that a single hour's delay would render all chance of success hopeless.

At a little before day a landing was made at another French habitation<sup>1</sup> on the St. Croix River, so noted in

<sup>1</sup> CALLED Gourdan's in Church's account.

the early annals of New England. The people here were surprised, and taken without resistance. After looking to the disposal of these prisoners, Church followed on after his men, who were industriously looking about them for more enemies. They were under standing orders to advance only in open order, so that if suddenly fired upon the fire would do as little harm as possible. By the dim light Church saw some of them crowding up around a solitary hut, nearby. Angry at so flagrant a violation of his orders, Church called out to them to know what they were doing there. They answered that there were some of the enemy in the hut who would not come out. "Then knock them in the head!" shouted back the choleric old man. This order, given in haste, and repented of at leisure, was promptly executed by the excited soldiers.<sup>1</sup>

Finding nothing more here the English pushed on up the river to the falls,<sup>2</sup> where still another French trader was living on a spot always much resorted to by the Indians on account of the fishery, and now cleverly turned to account as a rallying point from which to set forth on the war-path.

The advancing force being discovered, nothing could be effected here except to destroy some dried fish, which the enemy had been curing for winter use on the bank of the river, and the exchange of a few harmless shots with the owners, who ran howling into the woods.

Having united all his detachments below, and being joined by the shipping there, a descent was next planned against the French posts in Nova Scotia, in

<sup>1</sup> CHURCH himself justifies the act by a reference to the atrocities committed by the enemy at Deerfield and elsewhere.

<sup>2</sup> PROBABLY at Calais.

pursuance of which the armed ships sailed to blockade Port Royal, and Church, in his transports, to Mines, or Grand Pré, on the basin of Mines. Having arrived before the place when the tide was low, Church was forced to lie out in his whaleboats all night, waiting for the flood. Next morning the English, upon landing, had a harmless skirmish with some of the enemy, who were simply making a show of resistance to cover the driving off of their cattle. In pursuing these too eagerly the English lost the only men killed during the whole expedition—a Lieutenant Barker and one private of Church's own company.

That night Church set fire to the place; in the morning the dykes were cut by his orders, so as to flood the farms rescued by the Acadians from periodical inundation, with such great labor to themselves.<sup>1</sup> The work of destruction being completed, the English returned on board of their transports with the prisoners taken either here or in the Grand Pré  
burnt. neighborhood. It should be said in explanation of Church's acts here that he merely carried out the express orders of Governor Dudley, conceived, it must be admitted, rather in a spirit of savage barbarity than of fair and honorable warfare. Yet it was but a foretaste of what the future had in store for the doomed Acadians of this romantic region. Enough of them were now carried off to offset the number of English captives held in Canada.

The transports next sailed back to Port Royal, where the whole fleet was once more united, but not, it seems, ready for action. Thus far Church had been laying

<sup>1</sup> THEY made the mistake of cultivating the low meadows instead of the uplands, to avoid the labor of felling the timber.

waste undefended places, where little risk was run. Here an opportunity for more brilliant action offered itself, as Port Royal was defended by a fort in which a permanent garrison was kept. It was also the chief port of Acadia. In short, if Port Royal fell, Acadia would be rendered both harmless and helpless. Yet, with a force at hand fully competent to the task before it, nothing whatever was attempted. The invaders contented themselves with a mere idle demonstration—with lying off in the basin out of cannon-shot. The fort was not even summoned. It is hard to understand

Port Royal  
looked at.

the true motives of this ridiculous affair. If, as Church alleges in his narrative, he was restrained by peremptory orders from making an attack at all, why was he there? If, again, these orders were as imperative as he makes it appear (and his truthfulness is not called in question), why should he have submitted the question of an attack to a council of war, which decided against it, on the ground that the place was too strong for them? Thus, instead of being an exhibition of strength, the expedition had only shown its weakness. Yet Church still had nearly 400 men fit for duty, with three ships carrying almost a hundred guns at his back.<sup>1</sup>

Church, therefore, leaving Port Royal unscathed, sailed away to Chignecto (Beaubassin) at the head of the Bay of Fundy. The inhabitants having received timely warning had carried off their effects out of Church's reach. But this did not prevent their making a feeble opposition to his landing, though they ran away as soon as the invaders

Chignecto  
laid waste.

<sup>1</sup> THE French accounts make it appear that an attempt was actually made and repulsed. Nothing is found in the English accounts to support this claim.

were drawn up ready to charge them. After destroying the settlement Church turned homeward, calling again at Passamaquoddy, Mount Desert, and Penobscot, without seeing an Indian at either place.

At Casco, where he next put in, Church found orders awaiting him, directing him to march up to Norridge-wock before returning home. Finding his men strongly opposed to making the march, now that their minds were bent upon a speedy coming home, Church readily found an excuse for disobeying the order. Thus ended Church's fifth and last expedition. A wide extent of territory had been traversed, a few insignificant villages destroyed, and a number of prisoners, equal to those taken



RUINS OF CHURCH'S HOUSE.

at Deerfield, brought away. The expedition was looked upon in the main as a failure, and if the adaptation of means to ends be looked to, it was one. So far from suffering loss, the Indians had been merely frightened away from their old haunts, like birds of prey before the fowler. When he had passed on they came back again. Nothing was more true or more certain than that the geographical position of Port Royal was a constant menace to the New England fisheries. And as its re-

duction had been the professed object of the expedition, the failure to attack it easily provoked suspicion that all was not as it should be. And when Dudley's agency in the matter became known, as it eventually did, his motives were severely impugned. In fact, Dudley had not taken the public into his confidence. His alleged reasons, as stated by Church, failed to satisfy an increasing number of political and personal enemies, and indeed were puerile in the extreme.

dition,  
n that  
gency  
d, his  
y had  
lleged  
n in-  
s, and

## XXI

## NEGOTIATIONS FOR NEUTRALITY

July, 1704—April, 1706

THE scene of Indian depredations now shifts for the moment from the harassed frontier to one of the older settlements. On the last day of July, 1704, some four hundred French and Indians fell upon Lancaster, Mass. It was rather more than half the Lancaster  
beset. force which had set out from Quebec, under the command of Beaucour, boasting to lay waste the Connecticut Valley with fire and slaughter. When it had reached the Connecticut, a disgruntled Frenchman seized the opportunity of deserting to the English, thus frustrating the original plan of a surprise, and causing part of the invading force to turn back disheartened, while the rest struck off into the woods of the Nashua. Our scouts, perplexed by these movements, were at a loss to penetrate the enemy's designs. It was it possible to tell where the blow would actually fall next, though the valley settlements, guided by their own fears, thought there might be some snare to entrap them.

Lancaster being a frontier town, Captain Jonathan Tyng was posted there with a company of soldiers. The enemy's first onset was made in the west part of the village, near Lieutenant Wilder's garrison. Wilder himself and three more persons were killed here dur-



ing the day. Tyng rallied what men he could, and with the aid of some Marlborough men, under Captain How, made a resolute attempt to save the village, but being greatly outnumbered, he was at length driven into the shelter of the garrisons, leaving the rest of it in the possession of the exultant enemy, who then set about the work of wanton destruction unopposed. In a short time the meeting-house and several dwellings were in flames, and all burned to the ground. The marauders also butchered a great part of the live stock belonging to the inhabitants.

Meanwhile the alarm was rapidly spreading throughout the neighboring towns, whose inhabitants, seizing their weapons, flocked to the assistance of their distressed friends in such numbers as to enable them to renew the fight upon more equal terms, when the marauders, seeing only blows were to be had by remaining, beat a hasty retreat, carrying their dead and wounded along with them.<sup>1</sup>

Yet, notwithstanding that the English were now everywhere on the alert, the savages continued to strike first in one place, and then in another, keeping up their petty, but irritating, warfare of small parties against isolated farms or neighborhoods all summer.<sup>2</sup>

In the beginning of August one of these prowling bands waylaid a small scouting party, going from Northampton to Westfield, killed one man and took two more prisoners. There being more of the English coming up in the rear, the assailants,

*Petty warfare.*

<sup>1</sup> DURING this winter a story was current in the Connecticut Valley that Vaudrenil had first imprisoned Beaucour and then degraded him and taken away his sword. *Letter of William Whiting.*

<sup>2</sup> UNDER date of May 8, 1705, Sewall records that several "persons killed and carried away last Friday" from York and Spruce Creek.

in their turn, were unexpectedly assailed and quickly routed, with the loss of two killed and all of the prisoners just taken. Groton, Amesbury, and Haverhill in Massachusetts, and Exeter, Oyster River, and Dover in New Hampshire, all suffered more or less from the visits of these small scalping parties.<sup>1</sup> In October their reappearance in the neighborhood of Lancaster<sup>2</sup> was the cause of a fatal mistake by which the Rev. Andrew Gardiner, minister of the place, lost his life. It seems that a scout had been out the day before looking for the enemy. The soldiers composing it came back worn down with hard travelling. Out of consideration for those whose turn came to stand guard that night Mr. Gardiner volunteered to mount guard himself, and did accordingly take his post in the watch-box, over the flanker, when the time came to man the walls, remaining there until a late hour, when, as he was coming down from his post, he was seen, shot at, and mortally wounded by a soldier of the garrison, who took him for an enemy. The unfortunate clergyman lived only long enough to forgive the man who shot him, and to take a last leave of his sorrowing friends.

Rev. Andrew  
Gardiner.

Winter having set in, it was fairly hoped that the Norridgewock village might be surprised by a sudden dash, while the enemy were off their guard. In the very heart of winter, with the snow lying four feet deep, so that the frozen wilderness stretched out before

<sup>1</sup> At Oyster River they wounded William Tasker, and at Dover laid an ambush for the people returning from public worship, but happily missed their aim.—Belknap. August 11th they wounded Mark Gyles of Dover (with his son), who died a few days after. Another party fell on York, where they slew Matthew Austin and then went to Oyster River, where they killed several while at work in their fields.—Penhallow.

<sup>2</sup> OCTOBER 15, 1706, three men are carried away from Lancaster, from Mr. Sawyer's windmill.—Sewall's *Diary*. They were Thomas Sawyer, his son Elias, and John Bigelow.

them one vast sheet of dazzling white, Colonel Hilton set out with two hundred and seventy hardy borderers for the distant Kennebec village, where more mischief had been hatched against the whites than in any other place short of Canada. The long march was expeditiously made on snow-shoes, the onset duly arranged, but when the village was reached not a soul was to be found. The birds had forsaken the nest. After setting fire to the deserted wigwams and to the chapel,<sup>1</sup> which stood at one end of the village, the baffled rangers marched back the way they came. And so all this expense, hardship, and fatigue went for naught.

These two examples, one of a successful, the other of an unsuccessful, raid, tell the whole story of this war. The Indians knew that they could always find the English, while the English were never sure of finding them.

Spring brought with it a brief respite from a conflict which never seemed nearing its end, and which it was realized that the enemy might protract indefinitely; yet a respite of any sort was thrice welcome to those who lived in constant fear of death by violence. Most unexpectedly a ray of light pierced through the surrounding gloom. It was learned that steps had been taken looking to an exchange of prisoners.

**Exchange of captives.** Of all the trials arising from the war, perhaps the hardest to bear was the suspense relative to the fate of friends or relatives. That innocent women and children should be held for ransom was perhaps one of the penalties attached to carrying on a war with barbarians, but that a people like the French, professing to represent in themselves the highest type of

<sup>1</sup> THIS chapel had been built by English carpenters in 1698, at the conclusion of peace.

Christian civilization, should, either openly or covertly, sanction such a practice, was not only fostering one of the worst features of the war, but to all intents it was descending to the level of the savages themselves.

The history of these negotiations affords a welcome relief from the relation of one murder after another.

In October, 1704, a letter was received at Wells from Captain Samuel Hill,<sup>1</sup> announcing the safety of several of his neighbors who had been mourned by their friends as dead. Later, in December, John Sheldon and John Wells applied to Governor Dudley for leave to go to Quebec, with the view of opening the way for the release of their friends in captivity there.

The application was approved, and it was Agents go  
to Quebec. decided that Captain John Livingston, of Albany, should be employed to conduct Sheldon and Wells on their journey to Canada.

Early in May Hill himself arrived at Boston, he having been paroled by Vaudrenil, with the same general object in view. Hill reported a hundred and seventeen persons, old and young, in the hands of the French, and seventy more scattered about among the Indians. The boys and girls were kept apart from their parents; the adults were put to work, either as domestics or at such occupations as they had followed at home.

Within a week or two Livingston and the other messengers returned, bringing with them Captain Courtemanche, a French officer, whom Vaudrenil had commissioned to conduct the negotiations Counter-  
proposals. on his part. Better still, the messengers brought back with them two of Sheldon's children, his son's wife, Hannah—the same who had sprained her

<sup>1</sup> TAKEN at Wells, August 10, 1703.

ankle at the time she was taken—besides one of the children of Mr. Williams.<sup>1</sup>

Courtemanche was handsomely treated by Dudley, but his demand for the release of one Baptiste, a notorious freebooter, then lying in Boston jail, charged with piracy, proved a stumbling-block to the negotiations, as Dudley, who fully intended to hang Baptiste, plumply refused to include him in the exchange. Livingston declares this refusal to have been the only thing that hindered the parties from coming to an agreement then and there.

Nothing being settled, Courtemanche was sent back by sea early in the summer, in company with Vetch, Hill, and young William Dudley, the governor's son, to continue the negotiations at Quebec.<sup>2</sup> They took with them the draft of a treaty of neutrality drawn up by Dudley, which was submitted to Vaudreuil soon after their arrival in the autumn. This important step, which seems to have been kept very quiet, put an entirely new face upon the situation, and in view of possible results had need of being conducted with the greatest secrecy and delicacy on both sides.

Dudley's agents got back to Boston in November, having been detained by Vaudreuil until the home-bound fleet had sailed from Quebec, as a matter of precaution. They brought with them counter-proposals

<sup>1</sup> In a letter to Mrs. Livingston, dated at Quebec, April 21, 1705, Williams warmly acknowledges his debt to her husband.

<sup>2</sup> VAUDREUIL was afterward mildly reproved for the freedom allowed the negotiators while in Quebec. The Minister writes as follows: "The illness which obliged your envoy, Sieur de Courtemanche, to return in an English brigantine, has much the appearance of having been assumed as a cover for trade, etc." He further declares that Vaudreuil ought to have had young Dudley and Vetch duly "attended," meaning watched, while they were in Quebec.—Ponchartrain to Vaudreuil, June 9, 1706.

from Vaudreuil, providing for the cessation of all hostile acts between the two governments, a general exchange of prisoners, besides guaranteeing the shipping of each party from capture by the other, but forbade New England vessels from fishing on the coasts of Acadia. The limit for concluding was fixed in the following February. The envoys also brought home with them five or six English prisoners,<sup>1</sup> one of whom was Stephen Williams, the young son of Rev. John Williams,<sup>2</sup> taken at Deerfield.

As the people of New England would rather have fought ten years longer than to give up the rights they had always claimed in the fisheries, after submitting Vaudreuil's proposal to the General Court, Dudley despatched another messenger to Quebec in the winter by land. Up to this time Vaudreuil had been acting under instructions from the King's minister, Ponchartrain, whose feelings of magnanimity had at length revolted at the useless barbarities practised by his savage allies, but Vaudreuil now believed he saw through Dudley's motives in protracting the negotiations under the flimsy pretext that the proposed treaty must be ratified by all the English colonies, and, piqued at the discovery that he was being played with to gain time, he made preparations calculated to force matters to a definite issue.<sup>3</sup> Meantime the negotiations reverted to the question of exchange, which was now pressed to some purpose. It will be easily understood that while these mysterious messages were passing between the two governors, the

<sup>1</sup> "TAKEN at the eastward."—Dudley's *Letter*.

<sup>2</sup> AFTERWARD minister of Longmeadow, Mass.

<sup>3</sup> THE time fixed having expired, "I permitted several small parties of our Indians to recommence hostilities in his (Dudley's) government, in order to force him to declare himself."—Vaudreuil to the Minister, April 28 (N. S.), 1706.

prisoners and their friends were enduring the most cruel suspense.

In the winter (1705-6) John Sheldon, whose activity in behalf of his old friends and neighbors is worthy of high praise, went a second time to Canada, as Dudley's messenger. By this time Dudley had made up his mind to yield the point with regard to Baptiste, which he had said he never would do. Sheldon now brought back forty-four released prisoners, chiefly taken at Deerfield. In the same summer the brigantine Hope took a number of French prisoners to Quebec,<sup>1</sup> for whom fifty-seven English were received in exchange, the minister Williams being given up for the pirate Baptiste. Some few more were not obtained until the following year.

The inside history of these negotiations sheds light upon the dilatory motions of the contracting parties. In fact, complications arose at the very outset. Vaudreuil, for instance, insisted that the English must treat with the Indians for the captives held by them, as he, Vaudreuil, disclaimed all authority over them. This brought from Dudley a point-blank refusal to negotiate on any such basis, pointedly styling it "an Algiers trade," and to still another person, who had vainly worked upon his sympathies, declaring his fixed resolve "never to buy a prisoner of an Indian, lest we make a market for our poor women and children on the frontiers." For his final word he assured Vaudreuil that he, Dudley, "would never permit a savage to tell him that a Christian prisoner was at his disposal."

All this had a very heroic sound indeed, and in

<sup>1</sup> PENHALLOW says seventy.

theory was excellent, but in practice it did not work well with Indians who had only refrained from knocking their prisoners on the head for the sake of the ransom. To Vaudreuil it simply meant that he, instead of Dudley, would have to pay the price demanded.

But more difficult than all the rest to deal with was the act of those who, unable to resist the temptations held out to them, had voluntarily sundered all ties binding them to home or kindred. Some had turned savages, others had embraced the Catholic religion. In either case the separation was full and complete. In its way the work had been as thoroughly Seceding  
captives. done in the smoke and dirt of the wigwam, as in the seclusion of the convent, for when the time came to claim their children the grief-stricken parents were told by those having them in their keeping, and with apparent candor too, that their son or daughter no longer owned their authority. Indeed, in some cases, children actually had to be kidnapped by their own relatives and carried off by force.

It is safe to say that this method of enfeebling an adversary had not been foreseen in New England. But bad as it was, a relapse into savage life was less deplored, perhaps, than a relapse into Catholicism, so to speak, for not death itself could have cast such a dark shadow over a sorrowing household as the knowledge that one of its members had abjured the faith of his fathers for one he had been taught to look upon from his cradle as the way of perdition.<sup>1</sup> Some even became eminent members of the Roman Church. Among others, Esther Wheelwright, who had been carried away from Wells when a child, became the Mother Superior of the Ursulines of Quebec.

<sup>1</sup> In proof of this, see p. 33 of this work.



These incidents, so peculiar in themselves, and so far-reaching in their results, belong to what may be called the psychic phenomena of these wars. They go to show that their horrors were by no means confined to the work of the axe or the gun, but also included other, yet no less effective, methods of disintegration suggested by a policy as deep as it was unassailable. No more touching incident meets the eye of the student of these wars than that of the aged parent vainly watching for the one who, though living, never came back.

To make an end of the matter of a neutrality, each party accuses the other of double-dealing. It is certain that Dudley employed all his art to keep the negotiations open as long as possible. It is equally certain that Louis approved of the treaty. But with this brilliant despot the point of honor was supreme. Even as late as June, 1707, when the treaty was practically dead, he strictly charged Vaudreuil to take care that it should not be made in the name of Queen Anne, as he did not recognize her as the Queen of Great Britain.

But the proposal came many years too late. Too late Vaudreuil put before Dudley the absurdity of their cutting one another's throats without in the least affecting the result as between the two great belligerents. There was now but one sentiment in New England among high or low, and that sentiment had become so embedded in the popular mind as to be ineradicable. In a word, the conquest of Canada was become as much the settled policy of the future as the "*delenda est Carthago*" of the Roman senator.<sup>1</sup>

In Canada there was much grumbling because young

<sup>1</sup> DUDLEY claims to have urged this upon the queen ever since the beginning of the war, or for "these seven years past, by all the offices proper."—*Letter to Lord Sunderland*, August 14, 1709.

William Dudley, the governor's son, had been allowed to remain so long in Quebec about the business of the negotiations. It was even asserted that he and his companions had been detected in the act of examining and measuring some of the fortifications.<sup>1</sup> But here neither party had the advantage of the other. Vaudreuil's agents had been instructed to do the same thing.

Although there was a truce to active hostilities while negotiations were going on, several persons lost their lives at Kittery during the summer.<sup>2</sup> The winter was quiet, perhaps because the frontier garrisons were now well provided with snow-shoes, so making the Indians more cautious.

<sup>1</sup> CHARLEVOIX: Vetch was also accused of taking soundings of the St. Lawrence, in going and returning.

<sup>2</sup> At Spruce Creek (Kittery) five were killed and five more taken. Among the slain was Mrs. Hoel, a gentlewoman of birth and education. Enoch Hutchins lost his wife and children. John Rogers was afterward dangerously wounded, and James Toby shot still later.—Penhallow. See *ante*, for mention of this war-party.

so far-  
called  
go to  
to the  
other,  
ested  
more  
these  
g for  
  
each  
ertain  
otia-  
rtain  
brill-  
en as  
lead,  
ould  
l not  
  
Too  
their  
fect-  
ents.  
land  
e so  
ble.  
uch  
est  
  
ung  
of the  
Sun-

## XXII

### HOSTILITIES RESUMÉ

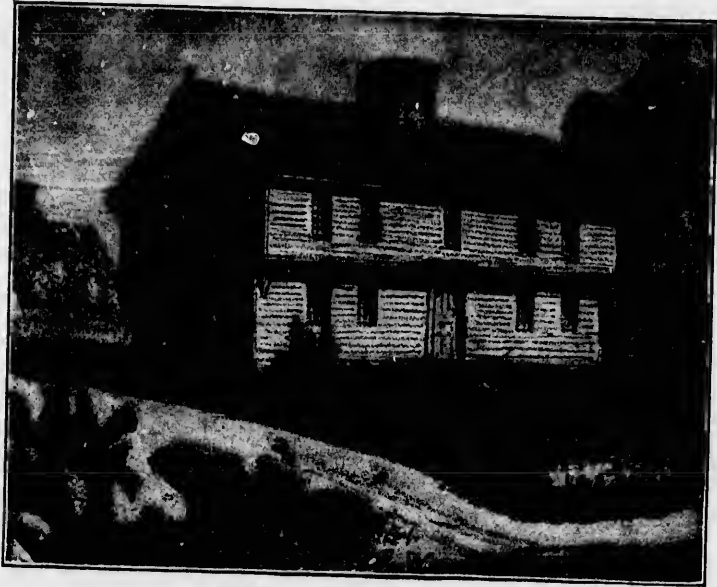
April, 1706—October, 1706

HOSTILITIES were resumed in the spring of 1706. In April the Indians attacked the house of John Drew, at Oyster River. Eight persons were killed and two wounded here. There was a garrison-house near at hand with nobody in it, except some of the women who, Durham assaulted. nothing daunted, let down their hair, put on men's hats, and fired away so briskly from the loops that the enemy fled without even securing the booty found at Drew's house. A townsman, John Wheeler, who fell in with the party, was killed, with his wife and two children. Four of his sons made good their escape by taking refuge in a cave near the shore of Little Bay. After looking for them in vain, their pursuers gave over the search.

In June Dudley was warned from Albany that another war-party would soon be upon him. He at once applied to Winthrop for one hundred men to reinforce the valley garrisons without loss of time; these to be followed by a much larger force. His letter closed with this Parthian shaft: "The first is necessary to save their lives till the last comes. Otherwise, I only expect your people to come to their funeral, as has been done sometimes before."

Dudley's advices made this war-party, said to be mis-

sion Indians from St. Francis, two hundred and seventy strong. Piscataqua was its supposed destination. The people were at once ordered into close garrison, scouting parties set in motion along the frontier, patrols organized in the villages, and one-half the militia directed to be in readiness to march at a minute's warn-



ANCIENT GARRISON, DRACUT, MASS.

ing.<sup>1</sup> Indeed, the emergency was such that in July Massachusetts had one thousand men under pay for the defence of her frontiers.<sup>2</sup>

This time the enemy had shrewdly chosen the most remote settlements on the Merrimac as the point of attack. They were not, however, left unguarded. The

<sup>1</sup> THIS seems about the earliest mention of the subsequently famous minute-men.

<sup>2</sup> LETTER of Secretary Addington.

blow fell first upon Dunstable.<sup>1</sup> On July 3d a garrison in which Captain Pearson of Rowley with twenty troopers was posted was assaulted by this band. It chanced that the soldiers had just returned from a scout without making any discovery, and after turning their horses out to graze in the meadow, taking off their equipments, and laying aside their arms, were indulging in a carousal in true barrack-room fashion, to make amends for the fatigues of the day. Worse still, no sentinels were posted. At sunset John Cummings and his wife went out to milk the cows. Meantime the Indians had quietly surrounded the house, and when Cummings and his wife came out of it they were fired upon. Mrs. Cummings fell dead on the spot, and her husband was taken. With loud yells the Indians then rushed through the open gate into the house before the astonished soldiers could have time to seize their arms or get themselves into a posture for defence. A furious hand-to-hand fight took place, in which such of the soldiers as had not lost their heads laid about them with chairs, clubs, or whatever else they could lay hands upon, with such effect as finally to clear the house of their assailants.

Fighting at  
Dunstable.

<sup>1</sup> DUNSTABLE first included Tyngsborough. It was settled before 1697.

<sup>2</sup> SEWALL refers to this affair as follows: "You will too soon hear of the sorrowful news of one of Captain Nelson's sons being killed in a garrison at Dunstable, this last summer, where my sister Dorothy's husband, Northend, narrowly escaped."—*Sewall Papers*, October 15, 1706.

The account given in Farnier and Moore's *Historical Collections* is substantially followed, though it is there erroneously referred to the time of Lovewell's War, and contains other very apparent discrepancies. For instance, it is hard to understand just why the Indians should not have discovered the presence of the soldiers if their horses were turned out to pasture, or have shut their ears to the sounds of the carousal, if one was really going on at the time. The main incidents, however, are vouched for by Hutchinson, Penhallow, and Dudley, though the whole story smacks of embellishment. Dudley says that nine English were killed to seven Indians, thus disproving the statement that only the trumpeter was killed on the side of the English. He also confirms the fact of a surprise, or rather of criminal negligence.

From here the savages went to Daniel Galusha's, about two miles distant, on Salmon Brook, where they quickly despatched Rachel Galusha, but luckily missed another woman who had the presence of mind to hide herself underneath an empty cask in the cellar, until the intruders had gone. But, after plundering the house, the savages had set it on fire, and the poor woman, imprisoned in the cellar by the flames, only effected her escape by tearing away the loose stones from around a small hole with her naked hands, until the opening was large enough for her to crawl out through it.

On the same day the Indians forced the garrison of Nathaniel Blanchard, killed him, his wife, and also a Mrs. Hannah Blanchard. They then scattered themselves through the contiguous towns as far as Wilmington,<sup>1</sup> Mass., where, on the night of July 8th, one party forced an entrance into the house of John Harnden, while he was absent, killed his wife and three children, and carried off five more. These last are said to have been recovered by a pursuing party of Harnden's neighbors.

On the next day some forty of the marauders fell upon Amesbury, where eight of the inhabitants were killed. Two others, who were at work in the fields, took refuge in a deserted gar- rison, in which two unserviceable old guns had been left, without powder or ball. These were, however, pressed into service, and when the savages ventured near the house the guns were thrust out of the loopholes at them ; while the men, whose lives were staked upon the success of their clever ruse, called out to each other, " Here

Galusha's gar-  
rison.

Murders at  
Amesbury.

<sup>1</sup> THEN part of Reading.

they are, but don't fire till they come nearer!" These two brave white men had the satisfaction of seeing their cowardly assailants slink away to cover again.

Still another band, who had marked Major Hilton for their especial prey, lay in wait for him around his garrison at Exeter, where they could see all who went in or out of it, without detection. One morning ten men came out of the house with their scythes, and went away into the fields to mow. After they had laid aside their guns to begin mowing, the crawling savages suddenly rose up and rushed in between them and their fire-arms, killed four, wounded one, and captured three more. The two others made their escape. Two of the prisoners, Hall and Miles, afterward came in, in a deplorable state, having lived for three weeks on roots and the inner rind of trees.

Chelmsford, Sudbury, Groton, Hatfield, and Brookfield also suffered more or less during this incursion, the subtle enemy, as usual, inflicting much loss and sustaining little themselves. Indeed, it was fairly reckoned that so far every Indian killed or taken in this war had cost the English a thousand pounds.

Dudley had complained to the queen of the backwardness of Connecticut in furnishing men, and Winthrop had received the queen's commands on the subject. This drew a tart letter from Winthrop to Dudley, who still insisted that Connecticut had not furnished her proportion. The relations of the two men had long been strained and this incident did not tend to diminish the friction between them.

An exposure took place this summer which made a great noise at the time. It was an open secret that the Albany merchants were getting rich by trading with the

Canada Indians; but this was being done under cover of a *quasi-truce*, which no doubt was sufficient to quiet the consciences of those engaged in thus giving aid and comfort to the enemy. No such state of things, however, existed in New England. With the enemy at their doors, such conduct on the part of her merchants was altogether too flagrant to admit of any such miserable subterfuge as that.

A certain number of English prisoners were known to be in the hands of the French at Port Royal. The authorities at Boston having fitted out a small vessel to go there for the purpose of procuring an exchange, the opportunity was seized by some well-known merchants of Boston to open a contraband trade there and elsewhere, along the coast, under the cover of a flag of truce. William Rowse, master of the vessel, was a party to the scheme. So was Samuel Vetch, who had figured so prominently in the negotiations of the year before. All the parties to the plot were no doubt reasonably certain of the connivance of Bonaventure,<sup>1</sup> the French commandant, in Illegal trading. their schemes, for Bonaventure subsequently entered into a labored attempt to clear himself from the charge. In doing so he implicates still another Boston merchant.<sup>2</sup> Des Goutins, king's commissary, confirms the general charge in a letter to the Minister of the following year, in which he says that there were "no pots, scythes, sickles, knives nor iron in the country. They

<sup>1</sup> BROUILLAN having returned to France, Bonaventure, *lieutenant du roi*, was left in command, but was not made governor: at Brouillan's death, as he expected, the post being given to Subercase instead.

<sup>2</sup> "MR. NELSON, merchant at Boston, being indebted to me in the sum of 5,000 livres, which I had lent him at the time of his imprisonment in France, wishing to make payment, had sent me by the packet-boat, for 1,900 livres, goods consisting of cloth, scythes, and pots."—*Letter to the Minister.*



would be lucky," he adds, "if the enemy would sell them goods again for their beaver, but Subercase is opposed to it."

Rowse made two trips on this business. On the first he brought back only seventeen prisoners, and on the second but seven more. His long stay at Port Royal to accomplish so little excited suspicion, and at his last returning he was charged with having spent his time in trading with the enemy in goods contraband of war, instead of attending to the business for which he was sent. Being unable to clear himself, he was sent to prison. Besides Vetch, John Borland, Roger Lawson, John Phillips, Jr., and Ebenezer Coffin, all merchants in good standing, were also apprehended and put under bonds on a similar charge. What came to light, as a result of these proceedings, caused a general burst of indignation, particularly against Vetch. Some of the more clamorous ones even wanted him confined "in the stone cage" for fear he should get away.<sup>1</sup> Even Dudley himself came in for a share of the popular indignation, as being a party to these underhand transactions.

There being no court of competent jurisdiction, the offenders were tried before the General Court.<sup>2</sup> Paul Dudley, son of the governor, was the prosecuting attorney. All were found guilty and sentenced to pay various sums—Rowse, £1,200; Borland, £1,100; Lawson, £300; Vetch, £200; Phillips, £100, and Coffin, £60. These fines were, however, remitted by order of the queen, on the ground that the General Court had exceeded its

<sup>1</sup> LETTER of J. Winthrop to Fitz-John Winthrop.

<sup>2</sup> UNDER date of August 16th, Sewall makes this entry in his diary: "Captain Vetch was brought to his trial in the court chamber." August 17th, he notes down that "Mr. Borland pleads that he was a factor in the affair."

powers. Dudley was exonerated, the matter charged against him being of too trivial a nature to be pushed, much to the disgust of his many enemies, who had hoped for a different result. In fact a petition was forwarded to the queen praying for his removal. In answer to this prayer, reiterating the charges of corruption, both branches of the General Court passed votes of confidence in the governor. His assailants then resorted to printing anonymous pamphlets.<sup>1</sup> But in the end Dudley prevailed over both open and covert attacks, chiefly, it would seem, by reason of his address in the management of men. At court Dudley was looked upon as representing in his own person the principle of royal supremacy, as opposed to the old Puritan doctrines of popular rights. So long, therefore, as the complaints against him emanated from that source, Dudley was reasonably sure of being sustained at London. For the rest, he was not the man to give an inch to his opponents. They might worry him, but they could never put him down.

<sup>1</sup> REPRINTED in *Massachusetts Historical Society Collections*, 5th Series, Vol. VI. *Hutchinson*, Vol. II., prints the petition and answer.

ld sell  
is op-

On the  
and on  
Port  
and at  
ent his  
and of  
ch he  
ent to  
wson,  
hants  
under  
, as a  
st of  
f the  
"in  
Even  
ar in-  
nsac-

, the  
Paul  
ttor-  
rious  
300;  
hese  
a, on  
l its

Vetch  
"Mr.

## XXIII

### FUTILE SIEGE OF PORT ROYAL

May, 1707

EVERY such raid as that recounted in the last chapter only made the impossibility of protecting either life or property in open villages, whose inhabitants were farmers, more and more manifest. When one of these war-parties was abroad no man's life was safe outside of a garrison. It may well be conceived that to men, strong, robust, inured to labor, and accustomed to the freedom of outdoor life, nothing could be more irksome than to be shut up within the four walls of a garrison. Hence, in spite of warnings, orders, or entreaties, fatal risks were taken, and many valuable lives thrown away. This species of assassination was draining the life-blood of a few struggling frontier villages drop by drop.

On the other hand, few Indians were killed in these sudden encounters. In the quiet of a summer's day a distant gunshot would be heard, and its meaning easily guessed. Nine times in ten, before the scattered neighbors could be rallied the marauders would be beyond pursuit. Could the Indians have made good even their small losses the war might have dragged on indefinitely; but unfortunately for them, continued attrition was wasting them away without the power to recuperate, so that their numbers were steadily diminishing. A more efficient means to

**Indians losing ground.**

their destruction than the edge of the sword was the wasting of their crops, thus often reducing them to the verge of famine.

In January Colonel Winthrop Hilton, with two hundred and seventy men, made a scout eastward as far as Casco without meeting with an enemy. But when come near Black Point, on his way back, a small band was tracked, four of them killed, and a squaw taken prisoner. The woman, who had a papoose at her breast, was either compelled by threats, or prevailed on by promises, to lead the English to a camp of eighteen more Indians, all but one of whom were slain while asleep.<sup>1</sup>

Hilton  
scouts.

Dudley had been kept in a state of alternating hope and suspense in regard to his favorite project of subduing Canada, by reason of the heavy demands that the war in Europe was making upon England. It was only by returning again and again to the subject that the queen's ministers were induced to fall in with it at all; but even then it was treated as something that could wait; so that Dudley's patience was sorely tried.

All hope of receiving effective aid this year (1707) having failed, and smarting under the wounds his reputation had suffered at the hands of his enemies, who boldly charged him with having sent Church off to Port Royal on a fool's errand, Dudley seems to have resolved upon making one more attempt, single-handed and alone, trusting to its success to retrieve his reputation and silence his defamers. It proved another

<sup>1</sup> It is this affair to which the following curious entry refers: "Gave thanks for the news of the eighteen Indians killed and one taken last Tuesday."—*Sewall Papers*, II., 181. In February, 1706-7, a strong scouting party went to Monadnock, another noted rendezvous for war-parties.

wretched exhibition of aggregated incompetency, ignorance, and pulling at cross-purposes.

But before anything could be done the popular feeling must be worked up to the fighting point. And here traces of the deeply rooted faith that they were God's people, guided by His almighty hand, are clearly manifest in the acts of those who then gave direction to public opinion. Honest Samuel Sewall, our Pepys, records that "several ministers pray'd (at the desire of the court) that God would speedily, by some

**Praying against  
Port Royal.**

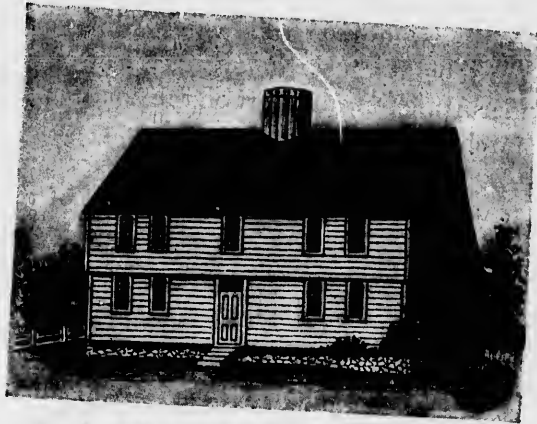
Providence or one way other, let us know what might doe as to going against Port Royal." Just how this manifestation of the divine wisdom was expected to appear is not so clear; but it is evident that the barbarous dictum that God is on the side of the strongest artillery would have found few followers in the Puritan capital.

Meantime, the practical side of the question was being earnestly discussed at the council board. In this instance, a regular fortification, built on a hill-top, mounted with heavy cannon and garrisoned by regular troops, was to be taken either by siege or assault.

**New England  
militia.**

Here was no question of mere bush fighting, such as the rustic New England soldiery had been used to. The best soldiers were none too good for this sort of work. It is no less to the credit of the provincial militia that they were ready to undertake the unusual task with some confidence. Yet we find certain fastidious critics speaking of the rank and file as if nothing but failure was to be expected, when, as a matter of fact, the material was precisely the same as that which won Louisburg and defended Bunker Hill.

Two full regiments were raised in Massachusetts, New Hampshire, and Rhode Island.<sup>1</sup> Colonel Francis Wainwright, of Ipswich, commanded one, and Colonel Winthrop Hilton, of Exeter, the other. Colonel March, an excellent partisan officer, whose brilliant defence of Casco had won for him the place formerly held by



COLONEL FRANCIS WAINWRIGHT'S HOUSE, IPSWICH, MASS.

Church in the public estimation, was put in chief command. The two regiments mustered 1,076 officers and men; and there was also a small artillery Make-up of expedition. corps, in charge of Colonel Redknap,<sup>2</sup> an English engineer, which with supernumeraries brought the whole number up to 1,150 officers and men. Will-

<sup>1</sup> RHODE ISLAND furnished eighty men. She was alive to the fact that her commerce was suffering from the depredations of French corsairs. See what Subercase says at the end of this chapter. Connecticut declined to furnish any men, Winthrop making some very lame excuses. There was one company of Cape Cod Indians, commanded by Captain Freeman, of Harwich. For the roster of the expedition see Vol. V, 3d Series, *Massachusetts Historical Society Collections*.

<sup>2</sup> REDKNAP succeeded Wolfgang Romer, one of King William's appointees, as supervising engineer of sea-coast fortifications. Romer was *persona non grata* to Dudley, who sharply rebuked him for his arrogant deportment.

iam Dudley, the governor's talented son, accompanied the expedition, in the rather anomalous capacity of secretary of war, and there were no less than five chaplains to keep the rude soldiery in touch with home and its influences, while exhorting them to a valiant use of their carnal weapons.

On May 26th<sup>1</sup> the fleet cast anchor in Port Royal basin. A thousand men were landed the same afternoon seven or eight miles from the fort, part on the north shore under Appleton, and part on the south or fort side, under March himself. Fault was found with landing the men so far off, as the long march up to the fort consumed all the rest of the afternoon, besides defeating the important object of cutting off communication between the fort and country at once.

*Troops land.*

Young John Barnard, one of the five chaplains, has told the story of the preliminary movements somewhat in detail. He was with Lieutenant-colonel Appleton's detachment, which moved off the ground first.

"It being so late ere we landed, we could not reach the place of our destined encampment, but after several hours' travel, partly thro' hideous woods and fallen trees across the way, which we sometimes climbed over, at others crept under, at length we arrived where were two or three houses and barns, and at nine o'clock at night took up our quarters there. There also Captain Freeman and his company of Indians, who flanked our left as we marched along, who also had a warm skirmish with about forty or fifty French, came to us without the loss of a man." Appleton's movement was essential to cover March's advance.

<sup>1</sup> THE old style is adhered to for the sake of conforming to the English accounts and records. The dates in Charlevoix are new style.

By their own admission, the sudden appearance of this fleet, the disembarkation of the English in such force, with their prompt advance toward the fort, put the French in such a fright that Subercase had great trouble in restoring their courage to the fighting point.<sup>1</sup> He, however, kept up a bold front, and by throwing out a numerous body of skirmishers, who <sup>Sharp skirmish-</sup> knew every inch of the ground, contrived <sup>ing.</sup> to delay the march of the two attacking columns as much as possible, thus gaining time for the inhabitants to come in from the out-settlements. Appleton had brushed away his assailants. To oppose March an ambush was laid at the crossing of Allen's Creek, a small stream, bordered by copses of thick brushwood, which lay between him and the fort, so that when his van came up, on the morning of the twenty-seventh, there was some sharp skirmishing before the English could shake off their assailants, and move on to the ground they were to occupy. In this encounter five men were wounded.

March now encamped at the foot of the hill on which the fort stood, where a few deserted houses offered some shelter to the weary soldiers. The task before him was by no means an easy one. From the ramparts of the fort forty cannon, some of them thirty-six pounders, frowned upon the hostile camps. A vigorous assault might perhaps have proved successful. March shrank from making it. The other alternative was to bring up his artillery, make a practicable breach in the walls, and then, if the fort still held out, try the fortune of an assault only as a last resort. Upon finding their commander in that disposition, the soldiers natura<sup>lly</sup>

<sup>1</sup> "Ce qui causa une si grande allarme que le gouverneur eut bien de la peine à rassurer la garnison."—Charlevoix.



came to the conclusion that the place was stronger than it really was.

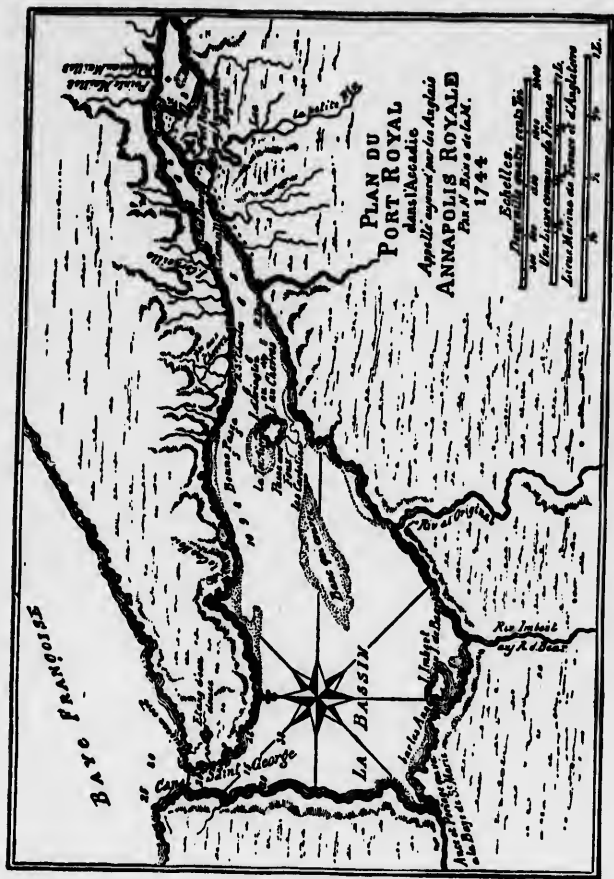
Everyone was therefore asking why the artillery was not brought up. This duty naturally fell to the naval officers, who now came forward with a positive declaration that the thing could not be done under fire of the fort. The opinion was hotly contested, but the royal officers would not budge. From that moment the fate of the expedition was sealed.

It is true that Redknap had begun the work of raising batteries, though his spiteful temper when on shore showed how fully he shared the antipathy of the sea officers for the land officers, which proved the shipwreck of the whole undertaking. But batteries without cannon were seen to be labor wasted. The place, however, was closely invested, trenches opened, and a regular siege begun, which, if resolutely kept up, could hardly have failed of its object, even if the English had confined their efforts to holding the French cooped up within the four walls of their fort; but at the moment when the battle was half won, the leaders lost heart, they fell to quarrelling among themselves, their disputes spread to the soldiers, and soon all subordination was at an end.

March was at his wit's end. His council advised one thing one day and recalled it the next. On May 31st, only five days after landing, it was decided that the place was too strong to be attacked with any prospect of success. Chaplain Barnard gives an amusing account of an interview he had with March on that occasion.

"When Colonel Appleton went over to Colonel March's camp," the honest chaplain goes on to say, "he took me along with him. After the council-of-war

er than  
 ry was  
 e naval  
 declar-  
 fire of  
 ontest-  
 budge.  
 sealed.  
 raising  
 shore  
 he sea  
 wreck  
 annon  
 r, was  
 siege  
 have  
 nfined  
 ooped  
 ; but  
 lead-  
 elves,  
 l sub-  
 d one  
 31st,  
 t the  
 ect of  
 count  
 n.  
 lonel  
 say,  
 f-war



PLAN OF PORT ROYAL, NOVA SCOTIA.

was over, General March, meeting me, took me aside and said to me, 'Don't you smell a rat?' I, who knew not what he intended, said, 'No, sir.' 'Why,' said he, 'Colonel Appleton is for staying to break ground only to have his wages increased.' I said, 'Sir, I am a stranger to Colonel Appleton's intentions.' He then said to me, somewhat roughly, 'I have heard you have said the artillery might be brought' (and indeed I had said so to Colonel Appleton, and even projected a safe method for it). I said to him, 'Sir, I think it may.' 'Well then,' said he, 'it shall be attempted; you shall be the one that shall bring it up.' I replied, 'Sir, that is not my business, as you well know; however, if it will be of public service, and you please to command me to it, I will readily venture myself on it, and find a way to do it.' 'Very well,' said he."

There is no evidence that the youthful chaplain's services were ever brought in requisition, though already he had won a reputation for bravery by marching alone beyond the lines for the purpose of making a sketch of the fort; and while thus engaged a cannonball had struck the ground so near him as to cover him with dirt; whereupon Barnard, suddenly realizing that he had no business there, beat a hasty retreat.

Good or bad, Redknap's objections had decided the breaking up of the siege, at what one officer indignantly calls "ye fatal council of war." There was no gain-saying a professional opinion, solemnly delivered. Yet there was a stormy time. The decision was retracted, then reaffirmed. "I think our general was both fool and boy-ridden,"<sup>1</sup> is the tart comment of one disgusted bearer of a commission.

<sup>1</sup> PROBABLY referring to William Dudley. See *Hutchinson*, II., 152, note.

Charlevoix relates, with considerable detail, a repulse which he says the English met with on the night before the siege was raised, while making an assault on the fort. The English accounts make this only a demonstration designed to cover the burning of some buildings outside the fort, and close to it, which was successfully done, under a hot fire of cannon and musketry. "Never did men behave more bravely or bolder," is the enthusiastic comment of an eye-witness of this affair.

Siege  
is raised.

The army was re-embarked on June 6th. Most of the fleet put in at Casco, whence March despatched Rædknap, with two other officers,<sup>1</sup> to break the news of his failure to Dudley.

But their ill news had flown before them, and a unique reception awaited their coming. Upon landing they were compelled to elbow their way through a crowd of noisy women, drawn together from the lowest quarter of the town, who saluted the unlucky envoys with mocking cries of "Welcome, soldiers!" One of these viragos, who carried an enormous sword of lath in her hand, rudely thrust it into their faces, at the same time bawling out, "Fie! for shame! pull off those iron spits by your sides; for wooden ones is all the fashion now!"<sup>2</sup>

Cutting  
taunts.

After running this gantlet, the crestfallen trio walked on under a running fire of the coarsest abuse, with a constantly increasing crowd of children, servants, and idlers following close at their heels, all shouting, "Port Royal! Port Royal!"

Dudley was furious. All his bright anticipations were clouded in disgrace. What was to be done? He

<sup>1</sup> CAPTAIN SUTTON of the Royal Marines, and Holmes of the provincials.

<sup>2</sup> LETTER of John Winthrop, in *Winthrop Papers*.

knew too well that he was the bright and shining mark at which all the obloquy would be levelled. Again all the old trumped-up charges would be revived. Many would rejoice at his discomfiture. It was not in Dudley's nature to sit down quietly under it. He decided on heroic treatment. The armament was practically intact. He would send it back. The frame of mind he was in may be inferred from the following sentence of a letter to Governor Winthrop, of Connecticut: "They are returning to that ground where I mean to have them lye fifty days at least."

It was an unwise decision, yet no doubt had the support of the people. There had been some desertions.<sup>1</sup> Two additional companies in a measure made good these losses, but could not restore life to a body already expiring. Three prominent civilians<sup>2</sup> were sent to act as a council to March, with authority to overrule him, if they saw fit. Again the fleet sailed. A second landing was made on August 10th, on the north side of the harbor; for Subercase had employed the interval in throwing up field works on the ground formerly occupied by March, so that the situation was now wholly changed for the worse.<sup>3</sup>

Though staggered by the unexpected return of the English, Subercase immediately resorted to his old tactics of wearing them out by keeping up an incessant firing upon their camps, waylaying foraging or reconnoitring parties, or cutting off stragglers, so making it dangerous for them to stir beyond their own line of

<sup>1</sup> SOME of the Plymouth and some of the New Hampshire men had gone home. The rest of the Plymouth men were confined in the Castle at Boston. See Belknap's *New Hampshire*, I., 343.

<sup>2</sup> THEY were Colonels Hutchinson and Townsend, and John Leverett.

<sup>3</sup> *Wainwright's letter* to Dudley.

sentinels. In a very short time it was the English who were besieged in their camp.

The rest of the story is soon told. March broke down under the strain, and turned the nominal command over to Wainwright.<sup>1</sup> Meantime the provincial troops were marched a quarter of a league above the fort, with the evident design of making their approach from the rear. Subercase learned from a prisoner of the plan to carry the artillery past the fort, under cover of the night, and cleverly defeated it by lighting fires all along the banks. Wainwright then fell back to a point opposite the fort, was cannonaded out of it, moved still lower down, and finally, on the 20th, goaded into attempting something, crossed his whole force over to the fort side and advanced as if to assault it in earnest. Subercase sent St. Castin out to ambush them. There was sharp fighting for a time, with the probable object of drawing out the entire garrison, as otherwise the demonstration was mere bravado; but Subercase would not venture upon so dangerous a step, until he saw the English falling back to their boats. Then a second and third detachment were hurried off to St. Castin's aid. All three were sent back, very roughly handled. The English then re-embarked, unmolested, apparently satisfied with having shown that they could fight, even when nothing was to be gained by it.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> COLONEL FRANCIS WAINWRIGHT died at Ipswich, August 3, 1711, within a few days of the date fixed for his marriage, and after a very short illness. Sewall says of it: "Tis the most compleat and surprising disappointment that I been acquainted with. Wedding Cloaths, to a Neck-cloth and Night-Cap, laid ready in the bride chamber, with the bride's attire. Guests several come from Boston but no bridegroom."—*Sewall Papers*.

<sup>2</sup> On the English side sixteen were killed, and as many wounded, and three killed and fifteen wounded on that of the French. M. de Saillant, *enseigne de vaisseau*, was among the killed; M. de Boularderie and St. Castin among the wounded.

Boston was thrown into a ferment. Dudley manfully endeavored to extract some consolation from the storm of disaster, but as everybody knew the truth, the effort to disguise it was worse than idle. The three high commissioners were laughed at for their pains; and jeered at in the streets with such stinging remarks as, "The three Port Royal worthies!" "The three champions!" etc. "But what could be done when the very devil had entered into the common soldiers?" is the concluding observation of a distressed looker-on.

All summer roving bands of Indians were infesting the highways beyond the Merrimac, killing, scalping and robbing unwary travellers. To enumerate all the casualties of this nature would be tedious. One, however, may be mentioned. On August 10th some of these lurking assassins fell upon a party of four horsemen, who appear to have been escorting a Mrs. Littlefield from York to Wells. The lady had a considerable sum of money with her. Only one of the party escaped to tell the horrid tale.

Upon the return of the Port Royal expedition the enemy grew bolder. They seemed to bear Oyster River a peculiar grudge, although that place had suffered more than all of its neighbors. In September a party of French Iroquois, hideously painted, suddenly rushed from their coverts, and with piercing yells fell upon a company of men who were engaged in cutting and hauling timber in the woods, under the direction of Captain Chesley. Seven dead, and one was mortally wounded, at the first fire. Chesley, with those left alive, manfully stood his ground, until he himself shared the fate of his companions. He was a brave officer, just returned home from Port

*Killing at Durham.*

Royal, where he had distinguished himself by his good conduct.

Exeter, Kingston, and Dover, in New Hampshire, and Berwick, York, Wells, Winter Harbor, Casco, and even the inland town of Marlborough, in Massachusetts, suffered to a greater or lesser extent. The winter, however, passed in quiet; but that quiet proved the deceitful prelude of what was coming.

Subercase was in great spirits over his successful defence of Port Royal, and its results. He very reasonably believed this success should be vigorously followed up. In this vein he writes to the Minister<sup>1</sup> that three hundred New England vessels had fished this summer (1708) on the banks and shores of Acadia, all taking an abundant catch; and asks that a swift-sailing man-of-war be sent out to cruise for their capture. He declares that she would make a million a year in prizes, would probably capture the Boston frigate (probably meaning the provincial cruiser), enable him to fortify La Héve, and if, as he believes, settlers came here in consequence, he would, with these helps, capture Rhode Island, which he says is inhabited by rich Quakers, and is the resort of rascals and even pirates.

Nothing is said of the West Indian corsairs who preyed upon the New England fishermen without mercy, carrying their prizes into Port Royal and receiving whatever they needed in exchange for captured goods. Subercase was boastful, but Dudley refused to acknowledge himself beaten yet.

<sup>1</sup> LETTER of December 25, 1708.



## XXIV

### HAVERHILL SACKED

August 29, 1708

STRANGE to say, although war raged so fiercely in New England all this time, a kind of truce existed between Canada and the province of New York. Both had their selfish reasons. To provoke the still formidable Iroquois would be to bring down a horde of enemies on the back of Canada. An attack on the Dutch or English settlements would furnish the provocation. Louis, therefore, had given strict orders to Vaudreuil<sup>1</sup> not to disturb the English on the Hudson so long as they kept quiet, and, on their part, the Albany traders found golden reasons for keeping quiet, so long as they themselves were let alone. It was well termed a criminal neutrality, since it left Canada free to throw her whole strength against New England, instead of having to look two ways at once; and while she was being impoverished by the war, the Dutch traders at Albany were actually making money by it.

This anomalous state of things permitted the old channel of communication, so long existing between the seceding Mohawks and their relations in New York, to be kept open, as in time of peace. Both parties came and went freely. The

New York  
neutral.

Indian go-  
betweens.

<sup>1</sup> VAUDREUIL to Subercase, cited by *Hutchinson*, II., 130, 158.

Albany traders found this arrangement profitable, the French Indians secured cheap goods for their beaver, and the Canadian authorities were only too glad to wink at it for reasons already pointed out. As the French historian, Charlevoix, truly says: "Thus our own enemies relieved our most faithful allies when they were in necessity, and while they were every day hazarding their lives in our service."

It is true that this unauthorized neutrality was also a means of getting intelligence of the enemy's plans. Peter Schuyler was indefatigable, as well in his efforts to keep the Massachusetts authorities advised of Vaudreuil's designs, as in holding the French Mohawks aloof from joining his desolating war-parties. But it is much to be doubted whether this advantage was not more than offset by, the Peter Schuyler. contraband trade which made it possible. Indeed, it would be putting it mildly to say that this sort of secret service did New England quite as much harm as good. On the other hand, the events now to be related go to show that Schuyler's skilful intrigues sometimes bore fruit at a most critical time.

Rumor had for some time been busy with a great war-party that Vaudreuil was said to be forming for a raid into New England. As the destined point of attack could only be guessed, the whole frontier was strengthened, the roads patrolled, and the inhabitants warned to be more than ever vigilant. So the spring passed and summer began.

Late in June, 1708, Colonel Schuyler<sup>1</sup> wrote from

<sup>1</sup> SCHUYLER'S letter is dated June 22d. He had been in Boston a short time before. *Hutchinson*, II., 131, credits this information to Colonel John Schuyler. It was Colonel Peter.

Albany to Governor Dudley the cheering intelligence that he had succeeded in persuading several of the hostile sachems, leagued with the French, "to throw down the hatchet at the feet of the governor of Canada," thus signifying their resolve not to go out on the war-path against New England again. He also added that he had great hopes of prevailing with the Indians, lower down the St. Lawrence, to adopt the same course.

At this very hour an expedition was in preparation against New England on a large scale. It had been resolved upon at a great council, held at Montreal, at which the chiefs of all the mission Indians domiciled in the colony were present, and had promised to furnish the warriors demanded of them. One hundred picked Canadians, with a sprinkling of volunteers from the regular troops, were to take part. Besides these, a sufficient number of friendly Abenakis from the New England villages were expected to join the expedition on the march, to bring the whole force up to four hundred strong. St. Ours des Chaillons and Hertel de Rouville were to command the French, and La Perrière the Indians. The better to conceal their march, as well as to hasten it, the different bodies were to take as many different routes to the designated rendezvous, at the foot of Lake Winnepesaukee, where the Abenakis should have preceded them. From thence two short marches would bring them down upon the Piscataqua settlements — Berwick, Salmon Falls, Dover, Portsmouth, Oyster River or Durham, etc.—where the meditated blow was to fall without warning.

On July 26th this formidable expedition set forward through the wilderness. Fortunately for those against

whom it was directed one party of Hurons and another of Caughnawagas turned back, the one disheartened by the accidental death of a warrior, which was considered an evil omen; the other, among whom Schuyler had so diligently sown defection, seemingly glad of any excuse to abandon the enterprise altogether.

Though disconcerted by this wholesale desertion, the leaders pushed on, under positive orders from Vaudreuil, although their force was now much too small for the sweeping blow first planned. A further disappointment awaited them at the rendezvous. No Abenakis joined them there. Instead, therefore, of throwing themselves upon the nearest settlements, the raiders moved off toward Haverhill, some sixty miles farther west, under the impression that it would prove a far more easy conquest.

Haverhill  
the object.

At Haverhill, the Merrimac courses leisurely on between high ridges of land, that slope upward by easy ascents to moderately level, commanding crests, where the outlook in all directions was wide and ample. Extensive as it was, it embraced nothing but one unbroken solitude, one vast virgin forest, dimpled with shadows here or dashed with sunlight there. There was not a white man's cabin anywhere in sight.

Buried in the depths of these forests the enemy was coming on without fear of discovery.

Just here, at Haverhill, the ridge is broken through to admit the passage of Little River, coming down out of the hills, at the east, to throw itself into the Merrimac. This was the open postern through which the village was easily assailable on that side, weakly guarded by a garrison or two on the heights beyond, where Thomas Dustan formerly lived. Unless this outpost

gave the alarm, Haverhill lay at the mercy of the invaders.

As to the village, it still consisted of no more than thirty houses chiefly grouped near the foot of the ridge, where it is washed by the river, with a few more scattered here and there along the crest above, like watch-houses on a castle wall. In one of these<sup>1</sup> lived Simon Wainwright, captain of the village militia. From his



SITE OF WAINWRIGHT GARRISON, HAVERHILL, MASS.

doorstep Wainwright could look off over the dense forests stretching far and away to the east, could follow with his scrutinizing eye through this labyrinth of aged woods the windings of Little River, from its vanishing point among the distant hills to where it finally breaks through the natural embankment on which he stood; and he could also plainly see if all was well with his lonely neighbors

<sup>1</sup> THE house shown in the engraving is opposite Winter Street Church.

over against him on the heights beyond. And this we take to have been his daily habit.

Other garrisons lay to the north and south, that of Jonathan Emerson standing guard over the approach to the ridge from Little River, those of Joseph and Nathaniel Peaslee flanking it in the opposite direction. These simple defences, in a measure, covered the more compact part of the village.

Other  
garrisons.

In fact, nothing more could be done. Three or four soldiers were posted in each. A certain number also were quartered in the village itself, some houses being designated garrisons and some not. Major Turner, Captains Price and Gardner, all good officers, were in the command of the colony soldiers thus posted.

Only the most sleepless vigilance could have prevented what was going to happen, as in the present case the back of the village, so to speak, was turned to the enemy.

On Sunday, August 29th, at daybreak, or the dusk just before dawn, the savages were discovered just entering the skirt of the village. Of all the days of the week, this one most favored just such a surprise, since, it being a day of rest, the drowsy villagers were still abed. In some unexplained way the outlying garrisons had been passed without giving any alarm.

Village  
surprised.

One man only, who chanced to be abroad at that early hour, caught a glimpse of the assailants filing silently out of the forest, close upon him. Taking to his heels he shouted aloud the alarm, fired his gun, and ran for his life.

It was too late. The marauders entered the village with him, whooping and yelling, like so many hell-hounds, at the complete success of their plans. At this

dreadful summons the inhabitants awoke. Smothered noises came from the houses. Presently a woman, bolder than the rest, threw open her door and ran for dear life toward the nearest garrison. A bullet was quicker, and the first victim lay bleeding on the ground. Then the assault became general. Frenchmen, daubed and painted to hide their detestable faces, loaded and fired, and cheered on their no more savage comrades to the work of slaughter. Some houses were weakly, some stoutly, defended. One party made for that of Benjamin Rolfe, minister of Haverhill, in which a few soldiers were quartered. Acting on the impulse of the moment, Rolfe ran to the street door, to keep the savages out. Finding the door securely fastened the assailants first discharged their guns into it, shattering the wood<sup>1</sup> and wounding Rolfe where he stood; then bursting in, despatched the wounded man, brained Mrs. Rolfe with a tomahawk, and dashed out her infant's brains against the door-stone. Paralyzed by fear, the cowardly soldiers were slain while begging for mercy. The house was then ransacked from top to bottom.

Two of Rolfe's children were saved through the presence of mind of Hagar, a negress, who ran with them into the cellar, hid each one under a large washtub, and then concealed herself behind a barrel of meat.<sup>2</sup> The marauders searched the cellar, drank milk from the pans, and even helped them-

<sup>1</sup> THE site of Rolfe's house is marked by a monument at Dustin Square. The door, pierced by balls, was afterward nailed up in the meeting-house porch, as a memorial of the event, and was burned in the fire that destroyed that house.—*Allen*.

<sup>2</sup> ONE afterward became the wife of Colonel Hatch, of Dorchester, Mass.; the other, Elizabeth, of the Rev. Samuel Checkley, Sr., of Boston. Their daughter became the wife of Samuel Adams, the patriot.

selves to meat from the barrel behind which the trembling negress was crouching, breathless with terror, without suspecting that anyone was concealed there. The poor fugitives were no doubt favored by the darkness, as well as the haste these brigands were in to be off to their bloody work again. Besides Hagar and the children, Anna Whittaker, who lived with the Rolfes,



PEASLEE GARRISON, HAVERHILL, MASS.

also escaped death by hiding behind an apple-chest kept under the stairs.<sup>1</sup>

What was true of one was true of all. The French contingent was quite as active in the house-to-house slaughter now going on as the savages themselves. Impious wretches! that had said their prayers, embraced each other, and commended their souls to God, just before bathing their hands in innocent blood.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> SHE also claimed to have saved Rolfe's children.—*Massachusetts Gazette*, September 27, 1764.

<sup>2</sup> *Charlevoix*, II., 326.



Thomas Hartshorne and his three sons were killed in the act of escaping from their dwelling. Mrs. Hartshorne secreted herself and her children in the cellar, closing the trap-door in the floor after them. An infant was left lying on a bed in the garret. Finding no one else, the child was quickly tossed out of the window without ceremony, but fortunately was only stunned, not killed, by the fall. The story goes that this babe was left in the garret for fear that its cries would betray the hiding-place of the others! The trap-door escaped discovery.

Of such sickening details does the story of the sacking consist. Still more remarkable were the events happening at Captain Simon Wainwright's, on the hilltop. As the story has come down to us, the inmates there were getting ready to make a stubborn resistance when a volley, fired into the house at close quarters, killed Wainwright on the spot.<sup>1</sup> One's credulity is severely taxed to believe what follows. It is said that upon her husband's fall, Mrs. Wainwright unbarred the door to the savages, who instantly crowded into the house, weapons in hand. With great presence of mind the wife of the man lying dead there before her, spoke kindly to his murderers, brought them food and promised to do whatsoever they should require of her. Astonished at such treatment, the intruders demanded nothing but money. Telling them it was in another room, the quick-witted woman left them as if to fetch it, but instead of doing so she seized the opportunity to fly with her children, one girl excepted, who was left behind. Enraged at the

<sup>1</sup> PELFREY erroneously identifies him with Colonel Francis Wainwright, late commander at Port Royal.

trick played upon them, the savages set fire to the house after securing their prisoners.<sup>1</sup>

A still more dramatic incident,<sup>2</sup> if we may believe tradition, took place at the house of a man named Swan. This man also had barred his door against the marauders. The Indians first ran against it in a body, but on finding that it did not give way, one of them set his back against it, the better to exert his whole strength, while the others joined their efforts to his. From the inside, Swan and his wife opposed their strength to that of the besiegers, and a desperate tussle ensued between them. As a result the Indians succeeded in forcing the door partly open, and Swan gave himself up for lost, when his stout-hearted wife snatched up an iron spit, collected all her strength, and ran the foremost Indian through the body. This house was saved.

Mrs. Swan's  
heroism.

In this manner the work of burning, pillage, and slaughter was going on with little check, when the distant roll of drums and blast of trumpets warned the invaders that it was time to look to their retreat. By this time the soldiers, collected from the neighboring garrisons, were on the march to attack them. The village was immediately deserted. Before leaving, however, the enemy had set fire to the meeting-house, but the flames were quickly extinguished.

As the invaders retreated, the exasperated settlers rallied and hung on their rear. Before they could reach the shelter of the woods, they were furiously attacked by sixty or seventy men, who pressed them so closely that they were com-

Enemy  
retreat.

<sup>1</sup> MYRICK : Chase's *Haverhill*, 222.

<sup>2</sup> *IBID.*

pelled to halt, throw down their plunder, and face their pursuers. After a sharp fight, in which they left nine of their number dead on the ground, superior force enabled them to shake off their assailants, who then gave up the pursuit.<sup>1</sup>

In this lively combat, two French officers, Chambly and Verchères, were killed, and in the various encounters of the day the French admit that eighteen of their number were wounded. Their accounts add that the monster Asacumbuit performed prodigies of valor with a sabre given him by Louis XIV.<sup>2</sup>

Between thirty and forty persons were killed or taken prisoners in this raid. Sixteen of the slain were inhabitants of Haverhill. The soldiers were mostly from the towns below. Several prisoners were retaken during the fight outside the village. Others made their escape. On the whole the marauders had little cause for rejoicing. They were so hard pressed that they lost all their packs, with their

*Loss of life.*

<sup>1</sup> FRENCH accounts speak of this fight as an ambushade, which was broken through and put to rout with great slaughter. Though it adds picturesqueness to the narrative, the English accounts make no mention whatever of such a foolhardy attempt upon an enemy, probably numbering four to one.

<sup>2</sup> As a mark of the royal favor for having, as he declared, slain one hundred and fifty of His Majesty's enemies with his own hand. How many were women and children he did not say. He was wounded in the foot in this raid, and very soon disappears from view. *The New England Weekly Journal* of June 19, 1727, has the following notice of his death:

"We hear from the eastward that some days ago died there Old Escambuit, who was formerly the principal sagamore of the (now dispersed) tribe of Saco or Pig-wacket Indians. . . . He, Hercules-like, had a famous club, which he always carried with him, and on which he made ninety-eight notches, being the number of Englishmen that he had killed with his own hands. . . . He had formerly made discovery of a very fine silver mine up Saco River, but could never be persuaded to tell whereabouts it was till very lately he was prevailed with to promise to carry an Englishman (who had several times been in quest of it) to the spot, and endeavored to do it. But upon their way, when they got within a few miles of it, he fell sick, and in a short time died; having first gave the Englishman all the directions he was able for the finding out of said mine, who is resolved to prosecute the matter, hoping still to make discovery of it."

provisions, besides what booty had been secured. The losses on both sides were not far from equal. Had the pursuit been as vigorous as the attack was prompt and well-sustained, the whole party, in all likelihood, would have been scattered or taken.

e their  
t nine  
force  
then

ambly  
coun-  
their  
at the  
r with

taken  
habi-  
were  
veral  
e the  
e the  
re so  
their

through  
rrative,  
upon an

nd fifty  
ren he  
s from  
btloe of

t, who  
or Pig-  
carried  
shmen  
a very  
it was  
o had  
a their  
died ;  
out of  
covery

## INVASION OF CANADA FAILS; PORT ROYAL TAKEN

April, 1709—October, 1710

A CRISIS in the long struggle between New England and Canada was at hand. Early in the spring of 1709 Dudley was notified that the queen was ready to aid the colonies in making one strong and united effort for the final overthrow of French power in America. Vetch, made a colonel for the purpose, came over from England, armed with instructions to set forward the necessary preparations. In company with Vetch came Colonel Francis Nicholson,<sup>1</sup> who had been Governor of Virginia, and more recently of Maryland, and was now seeking a new path to preferment through the medium of the coming campaign. He was well known in New England, through his association with Andros in the government of New York, some years before, but old prejudices seem to have lost their force, now that a common interest brought Puritan and Jacobite to join hands again at the sound of the war-drum. Moreover, Nicholson was a man of far more statesmanlike mould than the canny Scot, Vetch, and carried far more weight into the enterprise now on foot than his shrewd, but vehement and irascible, associate. From this time

<sup>1</sup> SEE a reference to him in the Hannah Dustan affair. He governed more provinces than any public man of his day. Besides Virginia, New York, Maryland, and Nova Scotia, he was appointed to South Carolina, 1721, having been knighted the year before. He died at his lodgings in Old Bond Street, London, March 5, 1728.

forth the fortunes of the two men were destined to be closely identified.

More welcome news can hardly be imagined. If one-half of what Subercase wrote to the Minister on the subject was true, no sacrifice was too great on the part of the Bostonians, if it promised to put an end to the depredations committed upon their shipping and commerce. These depredations were chiefly the work of French corsairs, hailing either from Martinique or other West Indian ports. Speaking of these freebooters Subercase goes on to say that

French corsairs.

"they have desolated Boston, having captured and destroyed thirty-five vessels. They have had during the whole year a scarcity of provisions, because our corsairs captured from them nearly six barques, the greater part of which were laden with cargoes." This refers to the year 1709. The governor adds that "the prizes taken by the freebooters caused a temporary plenty in the colony, and had put it in his power to make presents to the Indians."

In brief the plan of operations was this: The campaign was to be opened by a combined attack upon Quebec and Montreal, both by sea and land. The fall of Canada would, of course, involve that of Nova Scotia, Newfoundland, and all the rest of the French possessions on the continent, which would then come definitively under British rule, once and forever. To this end Massachusetts and Rhode Island were to raise 1,200 men, who were to take part in the sea expedition, while Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania should furnish 1,600<sup>1</sup> for that directed against Montreal.

Plan of campaign.

<sup>1</sup> THE assigned quotas were: New York, 800; Pennsylvania, 150; New Jersey, 300; Connecticut, 350; Rhode Island, 200.

Dudley entered upon the work cut out for him with alacrity. After seeing things in train here, Nicholson and Vetch went round to New York by water, calling at Newport and New Haven on their way, in order to hasten matters to the utmost. Finding everything



TEE YEE NEEN HO GA RON, EMPEROR OF THE SIX NATIONS.

working to their wishes, they continued their voyage to New York.

Here they were doomed to meet with disappointment. New York, indeed, no longer hesitated to cast off the trammels of a *quasi*-neutrality, and throw her whole weight into the contest.<sup>1</sup> Well she might. Subjugated Canada would divert the Indian trade of the great Northwest from Montreal and Que-

bec, to Albany and New York. With New Jersey and Pennsylvania it was different. Recently settled, largely by Quakers, who abhorred the very name of war, the former colony would vote only a money grant of £3,000, while the latter refused aid of any sort. The loss of men in this quarter was, however, made good, in part, by six hundred Iroquois

Pennsylvania  
and New Jersey  
hold back.

<sup>1</sup> As the treasury was empty, New York for the first time issued bills of credit.

warriors, whose wives and children were maintained at the public expense during the campaign. Nicholson was put in command of this force, reckoned at 1,500 men, which took up its line of march for Lake Champlain, cutting roads and building forts as it slowly advanced over ground destined to become the scene of far more momentous events in the future. At Wood Creek the army halted to wait for news of the sailing of the other branch of the expedition, before resuming its forward movement upon Montreal.

Meanwhile, the transports and troops assembled at Boston lay waiting from May to September, in daily expectation of the arrival of the promised squadron and regiments out of England. They waited in vain. It was not until October that a ship arrived

with the unwelcome news that the royal troops, destined for America, had been sent to Portugal instead.

Before the receipt of this truly exasperating intelligence, Nicholson had been compelled to break up his

Army at  
Wood Creek.



SAGA YEATH QUA PIETH TON, KING OF THE  
MAGUAS.



camp at Wood Creek on account of the sickly condition of his troops, who were dying off by scores from camp dysentery, contracted by drinking water reeking with the filth of the camps. Decimated by disease, the enfeebled force retraced its steps to Albany.



MOCON OH KOAN, KING OF THE RIVER NATION.

Unwilling to throw away what it had cost so much time, trouble, and expense to get together, the New England governors met Nicholson, Vetch, and Moody at Rehoboth, October 14th, to see what was to be done. It was unanimously decided to send the New England forces to attack Port Royal, provided the queen's ships then at Boston and New York would co-operate. This be-

ing refused, nothing remained but to disband the troops, settle the cost,<sup>1</sup> and swallow the disappointment with the best grace possible under the circumstances.

Nicholson immediately sailed for England to solicit aid for another attempt the next season. He was ably seconded by Peter Schuyler, who had conceived the shrewd idea of taking over to England some Mohawk

<sup>1</sup> STATED at £23,000 sterling ; reimbursed to the colonies by England.

chiefs, as a means of holding the wavering Iroquois faithful to the English, for that powerful confederacy now had a French, as well as an English, party among them. Schuyler accordingly sailed for England with five Mohawks, one of whom Mohawks  
in England. died at sea. If Schuyler had counted upon making a sensation he was not disappointed. His dusky companions were the lions of the hour. They were shown about London, feasted, flattered, followed about by the common people wherever they went, and caressed by the nobility. They sat for their portraits<sup>1</sup> to a Dutch artist. Honors permitted only to royal personages were paid them. The queen caused them to be clothed at her own expense by a prominent theatrical costumer. Even literary London, in the persons of Addison and Steele, bestirred itself in their behalf



HO NEE YEATH TAN NO RON.

—all this to impress the tawny visitors with a due sense of the might of the British empire. As a fitting climax

<sup>1</sup> THE originals from which engravings in mezzotint were made, reproduced in recent works.

they were given an audience by the queen herself, who graciously listened to the speech spoken for them entreating her royal aid against France in Canada.<sup>1</sup>

Throughout the spring and summer small squads of skulking marauders spread distress and alarm in their track. Mehuman Hinsdale was captured for the second time at or near Deerfield. William Moody, Samuel Stevens, and two sons of Jeremiah Gilman were surprised on the road three miles out of Exeter, and carried away into captivity. Moody was subsequently the victim of an adventure so remarkable as to be well worth narrating, if for no other reason than to keep alive the memory of what it meant in those days to fall into the hands of the savages.

It seems that a party of ten Englishmen was returning from a successful scout, which had carried them as far into the enemy's territory as Fort La Motte, on the Richelieu River. They were now making all speed homeward, travelling night and day to elude pursuit. It was necessary to be constantly on the alert, as they were now following the route most frequented by war-parties going to or returning from the Connecticut Valley; and they were most anxious to rejoin six of their companions, who were waiting for them at the mouth of White River, with supplies.

After paddling all night up the Onion River, the scouts left their canoes at the falls, shouldered their packs, and struck out across an elbow, formed by the windings of the stream, until they came to the river again at some distance higher up.

While making a short halt here a canoe was seen

<sup>1</sup> THE speech is given by Oldmixon.

coming down the river. There were five persons in it. On a nearer approach four were seen to be Indians, while the fifth was evidently a white man and a captive. When the unsuspecting savages came within easy range, the scouts fired with so true an aim that two redskins were killed outright, one tumbled over, wounded, into the bottom of the canoe, while the fourth, upon witnessing the fate of his comrades, plunged head foremost into the river, and struck out lustily for the opposite shore.

Leaving two or three men to take care of the swimming savage, when he should leave the water, the rest followed the motions of the disabled canoe along the bank, as it drifted down the stream with the current, at the same time hallooing to the white man to bring the canoe to the shore. He replied that he could not do so, because the wounded savage would not let him. "Knock him in the head then!" shouted back Wright, the captain of the scouts. This the prisoner attempted to do with a hatchet, lying in the bottom of the canoe, but in the struggle which took place the canoe was upset, plunging both combatants into the water.

The white man swam toward his friends, while the Indian made for the opposite bank, which he succeeded in reaching, wounded as he was, and was scrambling off into the bushes when seven well-aimed bullets pinned him to the earth.

Meanwhile, the captive was straining every nerve to reach the shore, but finding his strength leaving him, he lost heart when within a rod or two of the bank, and undoubtedly would have sunk to the bottom if one of the rangers had not ran to his assistance with a sapling, which the drowning man managed to grasp, and

was quickly drawn to the land. He proved to be William Moody, of Exeter.

While attention was thus drawn to the captive's struggle for life and liberty, one of the scouts who was looking on from the bank above heard the snapping of dry sticks behind him. He gave one hurried look in the direction of the noise, and instantly shouted out the warning cry of "Indians! Indians!" The cry was scarce uttered when the scout received a charge of buckshot in the face. Another shot dropped Lieutenant Wells, as he was scrambling up the bank after his gun, left there when he went to Moody's assistance.

In a few words Moody then told the panic-stricken rangers that the canoe he had just escaped from was only one of five, two of which the rangers had missed by taking the cut-off, while two more were still above them. Upon hearing the guns the party below had instantly turned back, taking to the woods for a cover, and it was their fire which had just disabled two of the rangers' best men. Dropping shots from the opposite bank also told the rangers that the party from above had now come to the aid of their companions.

Upon finding themselves thus caught between two fires, the rangers scattered in a panic, every man for himself, leaving poor Moody to his fate. Seven succeeded in reaching the rendezvous safely. The eighth man, John Burt, of Northampton, was never heard from.

Moody's tragic end was subsequently learned from some fellow-captives, on their return to the settlements. Upon being so suddenly abandoned by his rescuers he gave himself up for lost. Too feeble of body either to fly or resist, he was driven to choose between starvation or captivity, and nerved by the hope of saving his

life, he called out to the savages from his place of concealment to come and take him. The wretched man was quickly secured, taken across the river, tied to a stake and burned alive, in revenge for the losses these miscreants had sustained in their late conflict with the scouts.<sup>1</sup>

In June Deerfield was again attacked by a body of French and Indians, estimated at one hundred and eighty, led by one of the Rouvilles; but this time the inhabitants, many of whom had so lately returned from captivity, met the attack with steadiness, and repulsed it with the loss of only one man killed and three or four wounded. In September, at Wells, a soldier was killed and another taken while passing between the garrisons.

Nicholson came back from England in the summer of 1710 with a small squadron, which, upon being joined by other ships, then cruising in American waters, sailed for Port Royal, where so many reputations had been lost. On board this fleet there was a regiment of royal marines, and four of provincial troops, or about 2,000 men in all. Captain Martin of the Dragon was commodore of the fleet; Nicholson commanded the land forces, with Vetch acting as his chief-of-staff. The four provincial battalions were under Colonels Hobby and Taler, of Massachusetts, Colonel Whiting, of Connecticut, and Colonel Walton, of New Hampshire. Paul Mascarene, afterward Governor of Nova Scotia, commanded one of Walton's companies. Besides these, there was a company of Iroquois Indians attached to the expedition, under the orders of John Livingston, who held the nominal rank of major of scouts.

<sup>1</sup> CAPTAIN BENJAMIN WRIGHT'S account, abridged by Penhallow, printed in full in Sheldon's *History of Deerfield*.

To repel this well-equipped force Subercase,<sup>1</sup> the French commandant, could muster only two hundred and sixty men, the greater part of whom he was afraid to trust outside the fort for fear of their deserting. The ramparts were in a dilapidated condition, so that from the first there was little hope of making a successful defence. Indeed, soon after the arrival of the English fleet at the entrance of the basin, Subercase had written to the Minister, exposing his weak condition, and admitting that if the garrison received no succor, there was "every reason to fear something fatal."

As seven or eight deserters had stolen off on board the English fleet on its arrival, the besiegers were no doubt well informed of these facts, and indeed went about their work in a way to show that the result was, to all intents, a foregone conclusion. Little or no opposition was offered to their landing, although in marching up toward the fort a few men were killed by the inhabitants, who fired on the soldiers from their houses and then took to their heels. Colonel Vetch with five hundred men so lined the shore opposite to the fort with his skirmishers as to cover the landing of the cannon and ammunition. By drifting up and back with the tide the English bomb-vessel was able to throw her shells into the fort, and to draw its fire, thus rendering material service to the besiegers in throwing up their batteries. The fleet had cast anchor in the basin on September 24th. On October 1st the besiegers opened fire from three breaching

**Port Royal  
taken.**

<sup>1</sup> SUBERCASE was informed by prisoners that the Bostonians were again planning the conquest of Acadia and trying to induce Scotchmen to take an interest in it through Vetch, who had gone to England for that purpose. Mountains of gold were expected from the enterprise. Among other projects was one to seize on La Héve, and make a post there.—*Letter to the Minister.*

batteries at only one hundred yards' distance. It was sharply returned from the fort. The English now being able to reduce it, at will, to a heap of rubbish, a demand for its surrender was complied with as soon as made. Articles of capitulation were signed on the following day. Indeed, in the presence of such an overwhelming force, Subercase had no choice but to submit, yet, with a soldier's instinct, had fought to save his reputation. Strangely enough, his former successful defence was meanly used to convict him of a want of courage in this instance.<sup>1</sup>

A garrison of marines was left in the fort, with Colonel Vetch as military commandant, and the place, now definitely passed under the English flag, was named Annapolis Royal in honor of the reigning princess.

By the terms of the capitulation only such inhabitants as lived within three English miles of the fort were free to go or stay in their old homes upon taking the oath of allegiance to the Crown of Great Britain. Four hundred and eighty-one persons were embraced in this provision. All others were treated as prisoners at discretion, or as subject to such penalties as the conquerors might see fit to impose.

It will be remembered that Church had threatened to retaliate the savage cruelties at Deerfield upon the heads of the Acadians. The threat had fallen upon deaf ears. But Nicholson conceived himself now in a position to enforce it. With this end in view Livingston and St. Castin<sup>2</sup> were sent off overland to Quebec

<sup>1</sup> NICHOLSON'S *Journal* of the expedition, with many other documents relating to the siege, is in the *Nova Scotia Historical Collections*, Vol. I.

<sup>2</sup> SUBERCASE before this had warmly recommended St. Castin to the Minister on account of his services during the late siege. He declared that St. Castin was kept out of his estate in France under pretence of illegitimacy, although he had full evidence of



to inform Vaudreuil that Acadia had fallen into English hands. Livingston was further to notify him that if the indiscriminate massacre of innocent women and children by his hired cut-throats was persisted in, then the Acadians would be treated in a like manner. It was hardly worth while making a threat which it is more than doubtful if Nicholson ever meant to put in execution.

After undergoing unheard-of hardships in crossing the wilderness at that inclement season of the year, the envoys reached Quebec in a starving condition.<sup>1</sup> Vaudreuil, probably to gain time, despatched his answer to Boston by the hands of two of his best partisan officers, Rouville and Dupuis, who were secretly instructed to thoroughly reconnoitre the country passed through. In reply to Nicholson's threats, Vaudreuil simply said that if they were carried into effect he should be compelled to do the like by all the English in his hands. And this was all the satisfaction to be had for the attempt to frighten Vaudreuil.

his heirship. "This poor boy has to do with the first *chicanter* of Europe, and lieutenant-general of the town of Oleron, in Bearne, who for long years enjoys this property."  
—*Subercesse to the Minister.*

<sup>1</sup> SEE account in Penhallow.

Eng-  
n that  
n and  
then  
t. It  
it is  
out in

ssing  
year,  
tion.<sup>1</sup>  
s an-  
tisan  
y in-  
ssed  
reuil  
t he  
glish  
o be

outen-  
erty."

## XXVI

### MORE INDIAN DEPREDATIONS

June, 1710—April, 1711

THE operations against Port Royal did not seem in the least to check the wanton destruction of life on the frontiers. On the contrary, the impression that most of the fighting men were away with the expedition seemed to make the savages bolder than ever.

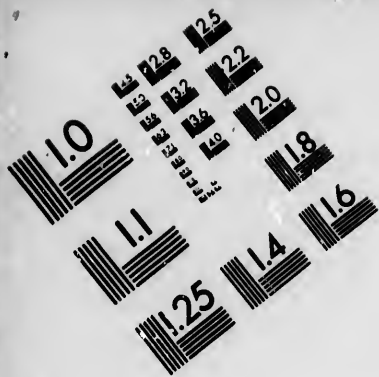
Much the most notable victim of the year was Colonel Winthrop Hilton,<sup>1</sup> of Exeter, whom the Indians bitterly hated on account of his activity in hunt-  
Colonel Hilton  
slain.  
 ing them down, and who had long been a tower of strength to the distressed frontier. Hilton had felled a number of mast-trees<sup>2</sup> in the forests of what is now Epping, and was busily engaged with his workmen about them, when the savages stole upon them unperceived, shot Hilton and two more dead on the spot, and captured two others. The rest escaped. On the next day the bodies of the slain were found shockingly mangled, that of Hilton being scalped and a lance left sticking in his breast. The murderers had buried themselves in the woods. This affair took place on June 23d.

On the same day the road in Kingston was ambushed, probably by the same gang, and as some of the towns-

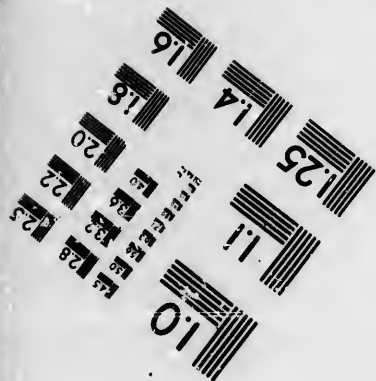
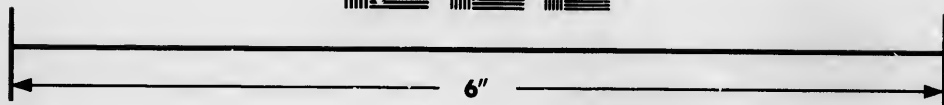
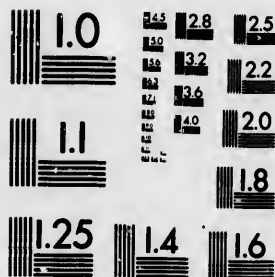
<sup>1</sup> HILTON was the kinsman of both Governors Dudley and Winthrop.

<sup>2</sup> THERE were mast-paths cut for the purpose of hauling out the timber to tide-water.





**IMAGE EVALUATION  
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic  
Sciences  
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET  
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580  
(716) 872-4503

18  
20  
22  
25  
E 18  
E 20  
E 22  
E 25

10  
11  
12

people were passing over it, Samuel Winslow and Samuel Huntoon were killed, and Philip Huntoon and Jacob Gilman carried off to Canada.

Emboldened by these successes, the elated savages showed themselves in the open road at Exeter, where four children were seized while at their play. They also took John Wedgewood, and killed John Magoon on the very spot where he had dreamed that he should meet his death. David Garland was also slain at Dover, while returning home from public worship. Waterbury and Simsbury, two exposed frontier towns in southwestern Connecticut, had several inhabitants killed at this time. The active and ubiquitous enemy then struck swift blows at Marlborough and Brookfield, killing six persons there, and also shooting down the post-rider as he was going to Hadley. They or their confederates

**Captain Tyng**  
slain.

then turned back to the Merrimac, in search of fresh victims, thus throwing their pursuers off the scent; and here, between Concord and Groton, they mortally wounded Captain John Tyng, one of the best and bravest partisan leaders of this war.

Thus the already long death-list was being swelled on all sides at once. Even poor, poverty-stricken Maine could not escape. At Winter Harbor a woman was slain and two men taken prisoners, one of whom, Pendleton Fletcher, had already been thrice a captive. Fortunately, his comrades of the garrison succeeded in redeeming him at this time. A week later, three more were killed and six carried away from Saco settlements.<sup>1</sup>

As usual, the English were powerless to prevent these

<sup>1</sup> HUTCHINSON says that Johnson Harrison, a noted partisan in the next war, was one of them.

outrages. Nevertheless, it was necessary to do something to silence the cries of the people. Therefore, in the autumn, when the savages were in the habit of visiting the clam-banks to get their winter supply of food, Colonel Walton made a scout along the Maine coast, looking sharply out for stray parties of clam-gatherers. None were met with, however, until he got to the Kennebec, all having withdrawn to a safe distance after the late raid, as their custom was. But while encamped upon an island here, his smoke Walton's  
scout. decoyed a small party of savages into his hands. One of the prisoners proved to be a head chief of the Norridgewocks, who, upon finding himself entrapped, maintained to the last a truly Spartan stoicism, steadily refusing to answer all questions put to him, and laughing scornfully in the faces of his enemies when threatened with death. Finding him stubborn, Walton turned him over to his friendly Indians, who quickly despatched him. His squaw proved more tractable. She disclosed the whereabouts of more of their people, some of whom were discovered and slain.

As insignificant as these reprisals may seem they were, nevertheless, hailed with exultation by the whites—a most telling commentary upon the disparity of ends to means in this species of warfare.

At times, however, the Indians themselves seem to have realized that in the long run the battle would go against them. An incident, happening at Saco, shows this to have been the case. It chanced that Corporal Ayres, of the Winter Harbor garrison, fell into their hands. His captors released him without hurt or insult, and very shortly came to the garrison themselves with a flag, professing a strong desire for peace. This,

no doubt, was the sincere wish of the old men. But the young men, like wolves maddened by the taste of blood, could not be controlled, and were only waiting for the coming of spring to be at their bloody work again. Four men were slain at Dover while at work in the fields; one was killed and one wounded at York, the wounded man succeeding in getting into the garrison after being knocked down and scalped; two more were killed at Wells (April 29th) while planting corn; after that John Church was slain at Dover, and the people there were waylaid while going home from meeting, John Horn being wounded, and Humphrey Foss taken, though soon rescued by the determined bravery of Lieutenant Heard.

Upon these alarms Colonel Walton made another fruitless march to Winnipесаnkee and Ossipee Ponds, finding only a few deserted wigwams at either place.

ha  
Pe  
ist  
wa  
thi  
ex  
ho  
tha  
off  
Ma  
Ch  
of  
we  
gue  
crip  
aug  
tar  
Bri  
of  
a n  
som  
clai  
New



at the  
te of  
iting  
work  
work  
York,  
gari-  
more  
orn ;  
the  
meet-  
Foss  
very

ther  
nds,

## XXVII

### THE GREAT SHIPWRECK

August 22, 1711

MEANWHILE the indefatigable Colonel Nicholson, who had gone to England immediately after the taking of Port Royal, the more effectually to urge upon the ministry a determined effort for the subjugation of Canada, was now returning successful from that mission. As this result had been rather hoped for than expected, it is necessary to explain just how it had come about. It is explained by the fact that in 1710 the Whig ministers were turned out of office, and a Tory cabinet brought in. Even the great Marlborough found himself out of favor at Court. Changes so sweeping are always significant of a change of policy. The war went on, but secret negotiations were begun with France looking to peace. It was argued that for nine years England had been fighting to cripple the power of the House of Bourbon, only to augment that of the House of Austria. Even Gibraltar, though subsequently ceded to Great Britain, had been captured for the House of Austria. The new ministry, therefore, had adopted a new line of policy, by which England should gain something for herself, to which her allies could lay no claim, should settle the question of dominion in the New World for all time, and finish the war with such a

Conquest  
of Canada.

Tories  
in power.

brilliant feat of arms as should lift the ministry to the very crest of the wave of popular favor.<sup>1</sup>

Two things contributed to mask the design. In the first place, the eyes of the allied powers were fixed upon the continent of Europe, where every move was closely watched, and in the next, it was wholly improbable that France should suspect England of playing so deep a game, while professing a sincere desire for peace. Even so consummate a master of the art of duplicity as Louis himself must have been staggered when his eyes were opened to the patent fact that he had been so completely overreached.

To carry out this grand design, a powerful land and naval force was being got ready with all possible despatch, the greatest secrecy being observed as to its destination.<sup>2</sup> Sir Hovenden Walker was put in command of the fleet and Brigadier John Hill of the army. Of the former little is known apart from his connection with this disastrous enterprise; and of the latter not much more than that he went by the nickname of "honest Jack Hill" among his boon companions, and that he was a brother to Mrs. Masham, who, in the general overturning, had succeeded the Duchess of Marlborough as the queen's favorite. Hill's chief recommendation for this command seems to have been hatred for the Churchills, as the duke had no sooner pronounced him good for nothing, and refused him a colonelcy, than the queen pensioned him and made him a brigadier.

<sup>1</sup> PALFREY (IV., 230-37) says this expedition was the favorite plan of Secretary St. John, afterward Lord Bolingbroke.

<sup>2</sup> ST. JOHN writes to Governor Hunter, of New York, that no one was informed of it except the queen, himself, and his colleague, Lord Dartmouth. Those who were to engage in it were given to understand that its destination was the south of France.

On June 8th, while the council was in session at Boston, discussing matters of routine, the booming of cannon at the castle announced some unlooked-for arrival from sea. The sitting was immediately broken up by the noise of drums in the streets, calling the town regiment to arms, if an enemy to repel his attack, if a friend to show him the proper honors. It proved to be Colonel Nicholson, bringing the queen's orders for the immediate levying of the land and naval forces of the colonies as far south as Pennsylvania. Better still, he announced the speedy arrival of the most formidable armament ever despatched to these shores, destined to lay siege to Quebec, while he himself, with the land forces, chiefly raised outside of New England, should be engaged in attacking Montreal, at the other extremity of the line. This sagacious combination, first devised by some plain colonists in the time of Sir William Phips, now newly renovated and set forth by the queen's advisers, would compel a like division of the enemy's forces to meet it, and it being reckoned that the invaders would still be the stronger at each point, little doubt was felt of the result. The main difficulty lay in getting the English forces up to within striking distance, and, by parity of reasoning, here also lay the strength of the defence.

Thus, at one powerful blow, the colonies were to be forever freed from all fears for the future. Certainly the prospect set before the long-suffering people of New England was brilliant indeed; for, with the downfall of French dominion, all the rubbish of Indian alliances, piratical depredations, contraband trade, and the like, would disappear like water spilled on the ground. Not the least gratifying result, reached by so

comprehensive a plan, was the bringing of New York into line with New England, for, no longer ago than March, Massachusetts had complained to Lord Dartmouth of the criminal neutrality maintained by New York toward the French Indians. Indeed, the selfish policy pursued by that province in the past had in turn offended, disgusted, and well-nigh alienated the still powerful Iroquois, who, from being eager to take up the hatchet against the French, as they once were, had grown indifferent or worse in most parts of the confederacy.

As her part in this grand undertaking, New England was called upon to raise two regiments. Some dissatisfaction was felt with the appointment of *Summons to arms.* Vetch to command them, as he was still in bad odor with the provincial authorities and people, on account of former sharp practices of his, but what would have been resented at another time as a slight put upon them, now passed off without making any stir. Yet, considering that Vetch cordially hated the Bostonians, this self-restraint on their part was unusual.

On the 24th<sup>1</sup> the fleet itself entered the harbor under a press of sail. Not having looked for it nearly so soon, the authorities were taken somewhat by surprise. Dudley had gone with Nicholson to attend the meeting of governors called at New London. The assembly, however, was in session, and with the council it prepared to welcome the distinguished visitors in a suitable manner.

It was just said that the armament was by far the most formidable that had ever crossed the Atlantic under the English flag. Little wonder, then, that the astonished

<sup>1</sup> THIS was Sunday.

Bostonians should have believed it invincible. In all there were fifteen ships-of-war, first-rates and frigates, carrying nine hundred guns and manned by more than five thousand seamen.<sup>1</sup>

The fleet and  
army.

There were forty transports and six store-ships, having on board seven battalions of Marlborough's veterans, mostly withdrawn from the Netherlands to take part in this expedition, besides a battalion of marines, and a fine train of artillery, complete even to the horses belonging to it.<sup>2</sup>

Upon landing, Admiral Walker and Brigadier Hill were escorted to the town-house by the local militia, and warmly congratulated upon their safe arrival. The admiral immediately sent for John Nelson, who will be remembered for his daring and successful efforts to thwart Frontenac's plans, while a prisoner at Quebec. No man in New England was better able to give an intelligent idea of the strength and weaknesses of Quebec, although Vetch was in the habit of boasting that he knew more about Canada than the Canadians themselves. Quebec now was by no means, however, the Quebec of the last war.

Walker and  
Hill honored.

The royal troops were at once landed and went into camp on Noddle's Island,<sup>3</sup> opposite the town, where they had a most excellent chance to recruit from the effects of their late voyage, and prepare for the unexpected work of the new.

Camp at  
Boston.

<sup>1</sup> For a list of these see *Boston News Letter*, No. 379.

<sup>2</sup> The following regiments were employed, viz.: Kirke's, afterward 2d Foot; The Queen's, afterward 4th Foot (King's Own); Hill's, afterward 11th Foot; Desney's, afterward 36th Foot; Windress's, afterward 37th Foot; Clayton's, disbanded in 1712; Kane's, disbanded in 1713; Churchill's Marines, and King's Artillery. To these were added the Marines at Annapolis. The strength of the marching regiments was 815 officers and men, increased in some cases to 900.

<sup>3</sup> Now East Boston.

military camp, thus transferred from the fields of Marlborough's fame, numbered as many men, if not more, than Boston itself, and no doubt furnished an object lesson long remembered by all who had perhaps seen something of the hardships, but little of the "pomp and circumstance," of war.

Dudley having returned from New London on the 27th, a conference took place between him and the admiral on the next day, during which Walker sharply complained of the merchants for offering no more than twenty per cent. for exchange, and ended by threatening "to be gone somewhere else with the forces."

Councillor Sewall, who was present, remarks that when the conference broke up, "the governor would make the general goe out before him, though he much resisted it." It is presumed that this little breeze soon blew over, as on the following day the admiral, general, field-officers, and several of the sea-captains dined with the governor at Roxbury.<sup>1</sup>

After the exchange of formal civilities was over, the serious business of the hour was taken in hand. It now transpired that in their impatience to get the fleet off before its destination should be discovered, the ministers had come very near defeating the whole enterprise at its birth. It was ignorantly assumed by those in the secret that Boston could of course furnish sub-

Trouble  
begins.

sistence for the royal army for ten weeks. So the commanders simply had been instructed to procure it there. Everybody was aghast at a proposal so absurd on its face, and to many it looked like a scurvy attempt to throw the responsibility for failure upon them. This, of course, was equally absurd. It

<sup>1</sup> "JUNE 29th, Governor treats the general."—*Sewall Papers*.

was not at all surprising then that only one merchant could be found in the town willing to undertake the truly formidable task of victualling the fleet at so late a day and without one hour's previous notice. This was Andrew Faneuil, uncle to the builder of Faneuil Hall. But for his energy and pluck the expedition must certainly have suffered shipwreck then and there.

The extraordinary demand immediately doubled the price of everything wanted. This advance was met by an act of the General Court fixing prices on the basis of former values. The greedy merchants retaliated by shutting up their shops or removing their stocks to places of concealment. To counteract this an order quickly passed authorizing the seizure of provisions wherever found, and giving the searching officers full power to break into any man's premises if resisted. This high-handed proceeding had the desired effect. Provisions were brought from their hiding-places. The merchants took what was offered them, though not without grumbling at losing so fair a chance of making their fortunes. And it cannot be denied that in their zeal for the good of the service the provincial authorities had stretched their powers to the danger point.

Very like  
Martial law.

The same thing was true with regard to wages. An embargo was declared on July 7th, both to secure sailors for the expedition and to prevent news of it from getting abroad. Following on the heels of this came an order to impress all bakers, brewers, coopers, and other artisans, who could not or would not supply the public at the stated prices. It seems, however, that the inhabitants could not all at once get over their traditional and habitual reverence for the Sabbath, orders or no

orders; for Colonel King notes in his journal<sup>1</sup> that on that day nobody would do any work, although the troops were in want of bread.

It was much less surprising to find it also taken for granted that experienced pilots could be secured at short notice. As a matter of fact, however, the number of seamen in New England acquainted with the rather intricate navigation of the St. Lawrence might be counted on one's fingers. It is true that Vetch had been to Quebec some years before in a small craft and had then taken certain soundings of the river; so had Captain John Bonner,<sup>2</sup> but with rare exceptions the river had remained a *mare clausum* to the English for twenty years past. This difficulty also was overcome by the impressment of several shipmasters, Bonner included, who were known to have some knowledge, more or less, of the dreaded river of Canada.

This done, a new source of irritation was found in the frequent desertions from the army and fleet, which the inhabitants were charged with aiding and abetting. The admiral stormed and fumed. He angrily demanded of Dudley that these losses should be made good by a resort to an impressment, but Dudley knew better than to attempt such a thing himself, and the admiral wisely refrained from doing what wholly exceeded his powers. A law, however, was promptly passed imposing a penalty of £50 for harboring deserters, with a summary process for bringing the offenders to trial. It is only just to say that the people had so patiently borne with all the

<sup>1</sup> BRITISH *Colonial Papers*. But see what Cotton Mather has to say, later on.

<sup>2</sup> "WHEN they (the French) were promising themselves to draw away the English to Popery, news came that an English brigantine was coming up; and y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> hon. Saml. Appleton, Esq., was coming ambassador to fetch off the captives, and Capt. John Bonner with him."—*The Redeemed Captive*.



burdens imposed upon them by the queen, which they felt were quite enough, but also with these unlooked-for exactions of the royal officers, simply because they realized of what vast importance the undertaking was to their own future welfare.

At another time Dudley would have thought that he had troubles enough of his own, and to spare, without being burdened with so many complicated evils not of his creating, but laid at his door all the same. He had his two regiments to raise, transports to provide, and supplies to purchase, with a market already swept bare of everything to supply the royal forces. (In fact, the Bostonians were eating salted meats in order that the troops might have fresh.) There was no money. To tide over the emergency £40,000 in bills of credit were issued. Two full regiments were raised<sup>1</sup> and put under the command of Colonels Vetch and Walton, Vetch having come from Annapolis for that purpose, thus bringing the total land forces up to nearly, if not quite, 7,000 men.

Ready at last, the combined fleet set sail on July 30th, after a detention of only five weeks in port. The superb appearance of this truly formidable armada, as ship after ship spread its canvases to the breeze, gave rise to the most confident anticipations of success; yet in view of the domineering conduct of its officers it may well be doubted whether its arrival or departure was hailed with the more pleasure.

The fleet put in at Gaspé on August 18th on account of contrary winds. On the 20th it got under way again, the admiral having now on board the flag-ship a

<sup>1</sup> Of the 1,500 provincials, Massachusetts furnished 1,160, New Hampshire 100, and Rhode Island the rest.

French pilot, called Paradis, picked up by one of the cruisers sent out in advance to prevent news of the fleet from going to Quebec before it. Vetch, all impatience, was in a constant fret over the dilatory motions of the admiral in not standing on into the river, when the wind was favorable, which course, Vetch did not hesitate to say, would have prevented what afterward happened. But Walker charged the delay, as Vetch contends, to the timidity of Paddon, his captain, and of "Old Bonner," his pilot, about weathering the shoals of Anticosti.

Nothing material occurred on the two following days. Some of the vessels had been late in coming out of Gaspé, and had fallen astern. All, however, had cleared Anticosti, but were making very little headway in consequence of light winds and a heavy sea.

On the afternoon of the 22d the wind worked round to the east or east-southeast, and blew fresh, bringing with it a thick fog. There being no land in sight, from which to judge of the position of the fleet, with every prospect of a dirty night before them, by the admiral's orders the ships were hove to, heads to the south, in the expectation that they would thus ride out the night at a safe distance from shore. In plain words, while slowly jogging to windward they were left to drift to leeward. To anchor in a hundred fathoms was, of course, out of the question.

From this point, up to which they agree fairly well, the various accounts are so conflicting that any attempt to reconcile them would be folly. One thing is clear: No man in his senses would have handled the fleet in that manner if he had not supposed the land many leagues under his lee.

Delay at  
Gaspé.

Night of Au-  
gust 22d.

Darkness enveloped the fleet which was buffeting the rising gale in the way just pointed out, much scattered, and with a growing uneasiness among the officers quite natural to navigators sailing without guide or landmark.<sup>1</sup>

The admiral's account of what fell under his own observation is sufficiently graphic. He was just turning in for the night when Paddon, the captain of the *Edgar*, came down to say that land was in sight. Supposing it to be the south shore, Walker merely ordered the signal made to steer in the opposite direction, and then went to bed. Shortly after, Captain Goddard, **Breakers  
ahead.** of the army, at the solicitation of the French pilot, rushed into the cabin in great agitation and begged of the admiral at least to come on deck, and see for himself; but Walker, annoyed at the interference of a landsman, only laughed at his fears and refused to stir. A second time Goddard came down exclaiming, "For God's sake come on deck or we shall all be lost! I see breakers all around us." "Putting on my gown and slippers," says the admiral, "I found what he told me to be true; but still I could see no land to leeward." Just then the moon broke through the mist and showed him his mistake. Under his instructions the whole fleet was blindly rushing on to its destruction.

It was midnight, or later, when the alarm was given that the ships were among the breakers. All was instantly confusion, terror, and dismay. Signal guns boomed dismally in the darkness. High above the

<sup>1</sup> THE admiral laid the blame of this fatal manœuvre upon the pilots, who, to a man, flatly denied having given any such advice. The charts show the fleet at this time to have been actually embayed by the southerly trend of the north shore.



PLACE OF THE WRECK.

shouts of the living rose the drowning shrieks of hundreds of miserable wretches, as one ship after another crashed bodily upon the hidden rocks of the low-lying Egg Islands. When it was all over, eight transports were seen to have been lost and not far from a thousand persons had perished.

**Ships go  
ashore.**

Bad as this was, the wonder is that any escaped to tell the tale. But warned by the signal guns fired by the ships that had struck, some captains wore ship in time to go clear of the rocks, while others, upon finding themselves actually among the breakers, let go their anchors as a last resort and

Narrow  
escapes.

were saved by a lucky shift of wind from the very jaws of destruction. Among others, the flag-ship herself was caught in this perilous plight, from which she only escaped by cutting her cables and crowding on all sail.

The next day was spent in rescuing such of the shipwrecked soldiers and sailors as had survived that dreadful night. The number saved fell only one short of five hundred, but fully nine hundred more lay stretched along the inhospitable shore, victims to incompetency, obstinacy, or neglect.<sup>1</sup>

On the 25th a council of war was held on board the Windsor, at which it was resolved not to make any further attempt to ascend the river. The admiral plainly showed that he was still laboring under the depressing impressions left on his mind by the late disaster. Yet none of the fighting ships had sustained any injury worth mentioning, while the land forces were still strong enough to give a good account of themselves. Though crippled, the fleet was by no means disabled. A commander with the spirit of a Nelson or a Wolfe

<sup>1</sup> THE Queen's regiment, afterward the King's Own, lost two hundred and nineteen officers and men and twenty women. These were probably the troops Charlevoix refers to as the queen's guards, etc. Captain Laurence Armstrong, of Windress's regiment, afterward Lieutenant-governor of Nova Scotia, escaped with the loss of his clothes, also his own and his company's baggage and arms. Charlevoix makes the number of drowned 8,000, evidently mere guesswork, as fully six weeks elapsed before the disaster was known at Quebec. More or less accurate returns were made of the troops lost, but not of the shipwrecked crews. Only one of the New England transports went ashore, but without loss of life.

would have met the crisis differently. But Walker and Hili flinched from it. In vain Vetch urged the admiral to recall his decision. A way of retreat not absolutely disgraceful was quickly seized upon, defeat confessed,



SCHUYLER AND THE INDIAN SCOUTS.

and the great fleet steered for Spanish River, now Sydney, in Cape Breton, and thence for England, after seeing the colonial vessels safe on their own coast.

Word was immediately sent to Nicholson, who, with the prospect of having all Canada upon his hands, had no choice but to break camp and disband his forces, in the deepest mortification at seeing his really great efforts twice brought to naught before he could even strike a single blow.

**Fleet turns  
back.**

Upon New England news of the disaster fell with stunning effect. Success, full and ample, had been looked for, not defeat. Looked at in any way it was realized that all hope of the conquest of Canada was now at an end for years to come, if not forever. From the attitude of the commanders all along there were well-grounded fears that New England, and particularly Boston, would be made the scapegoat of the affair in order to shield themselves.

**Effects of  
failure.**

As usual, intense discouragement gave rise to a season of rigid self-examination by those pious souls who saw only in this signal overthrow the manifest anger of God for the sins of the worldly minded among them. In especial, Cotton Mather loudly bewails the decay of true piety as inviting the divine wrath. "Have not burdens been carried through the streets on the Sabbath Day?" he pointedly asks his congregation of merchants, shipwrights, and petty tradesmen. "Have not bakers, carpenters, and other tradesmen been employed in servile works on the Sabbath Day?"

With better reason, since they themselves had no hand in bringing it about, the Canadians also attributed their escape to "a Providence who in a singular manner watched over them, and who, not content with delivering them from the greatest danger which the colony had ever run, had actually enriched it with the spoils of an enemy it had not

**Joy in  
Canada.**

even had the trouble to vanquish."<sup>1</sup> Solemn masses were said, and votive offerings made at the shrine of Notre Dame de Victoires.

Strangely enough the earliest intelligence of the disaster reached Quebec by way of Albany, after Nicholson's retreat to that place. It was not until the middle of October that two French ships arrived there from sea, bringing news that no enemy had been seen in coming up the river. These tidings were presently confirmed direct from the scene of the wreck, *Vestiges of the wreck.* which was reported strewn with corpses, lying in heaps among the wreckage of all sorts cast up by the waves. Wedged firmly in the rocks of the Egg Islands lay the stranded hulks that had borne them to their death, slowly dropping to pieces. Superstition had already fixed itself upon the scene of desolation. Mysterious lights, dancing over the water, were said to have heralded the disaster, and are, it is averred, still to be seen on the anniversary of its occurrence.

A great deal of plunder was secured from the wrecks. Among other things found there was a parcel of proclamations, which Hill had got printed at Boston, in bad French, for distribution among the Canadians. They could now afford to laugh at his threats.

The ill-starred fleet of Sir Hovenden Walker had not yet reached the end of its misfortunes. On the voyage home the frigate Feversham and three transports were lost in the Gulf of St. Lawrence. One week after the admiral's arrival at Portsmouth, the flag-ship Edgar, with the admiral's papers and journals, and four hundred men on board, blew up at her moorings.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> CHARLEVOIX.

<sup>2</sup> WALKER says he lost the original of Sir William Phips's journal of his Canada expedition by this accident.



In England the Court went into mourning. Strange to say no official inquiry was made into the causes of the return of the fleet. The real delinquents, however, sought to shield themselves by throwing the blame upon Dudley, upon the Bostonians, upon the pilots—in short, upon everybody but themselves. Dudley was notified of the coming storm and made a dignified answer. The pilots were sent to England, in order to give their evidence, but it was never called for. The policy of the Minister seemed to be to let the matter die out. Silence, indeed, best served to hide the cruel mortification of such a wretched *fasco*, which it was hoped might be the sooner forgotten. This was all very well for England. But in the colonies, where public expectation had been raised to such a height, only that the fall might be the greater, the universal discouragement found vent in mutterings, long, loud, and deep.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Of what may be called contemporaneous authority, the journals of Walker, Hill, Vetch, and King are in existence. Walker's was not published until 1720, when the events were not fresh in the writer's memory. It was an attempt to exonerate himself. Vetch's may be found in Vol. IV., *Nova Scotia Historical Society Collections*, King's in the *British Colonial Papers*. See also Charlevoix and Penhallow; also Lieutenant-colonel George Lee's letter of September 12, 1711. An extract from a letter of Samson Sheafe, commissary to the New England forces, in *Hutchinson*, Vol. II., may be considered contemporaneous. Hutchinson gives the best account of what occurred while the fleet lay at Boston. There is also a reference to the expedition in the *London Magazine* for 1756, p. 231.

## XXVIII

### CONCLUSION

COMMISSARY SHEAFE, writing home from Annapolis, under date of October 6, 1711, truly says of the futile ending of Walker's expedition: "This will be a bitter pill for New England." His words regarding the outlook were no less prophetic: "The French will now employ their Indians with redoubled rage and malice, to distress and destroy our exposed frontiers."

To forestall these incursions, Colonel Walton marched in the autumn at the head of one hundred and eighty men as far as Penobscot, where he found two vessels being fitted out as privateers, and burned them. He also took a few prisoners here.

A single piece of good fortune may be placed to the credit of Walker's inglorious expedition. It was not much, but it counted for much just at this time, when the public mind was so depressed by defeat. It was now learned that Annapolis had been on the point of falling into the enemy's hands again. Indeed, very few people knew how narrow had been the escape, until the danger was over, or how determined the French were to repossess themselves of a place of such vital importance to the control of the fisheries.

Outside of the three-mile limit expressed in the articles of capitulation, the inhabitants were openly

hostile, and inside of it covertly so. In the first place they were as strongly loyal to their old master as ever, and in the next, Nicholson's drastic treatment was not likely to reconcile them to their new one. To all intents, therefore, they were still enemies to be reckoned with. Vaudreuil, always alive to the importance of recovering Acadia, never ceased to exhort these people through his agents, the missionaries, to hold fast to their old allegiance, promising them his active assistance to maintain themselves where they were, rather than see them abandon the colony, as they had proposed doing. That would never do. Events were shaping themselves exactly to Vaudreuil's wishes. Annapolis had fallen in October. By June 1st, following, the garrison had lost two-thirds of its numbers by sickness,<sup>1</sup> if French reports are true, and in this weak condition no doubt would have fallen an Situation at  
Annapolis. easy prey to the exasperated Acadians, who were only waiting for reinforcements to arrive from Quebec to break out in open revolt, when certain news of the English fleet being seen on the coast caused the whole enterprise to fall to the ground. After the fleet's return, Annapolis was made secure against any sudden stroke.

Here began those anomalous conditions which finally resulted in the expulsion of the Acadians from their native country forty-five years later. From this time onward they were as undeniably the victims of French policy as soldiers ordered to hold a post, with the full knowledge that they are to be sacrificed to the last man.

<sup>1</sup> AN exaggeration, though some had been withdrawn, and their places taken by New England troops.

The Bostonians were in the first glow of mingled anger and mortification over the ill-success of the great expedition when a new calamity pushed the old rudely aside. On October 2d, early in the evening, a fire broke out "through the carelessness of an old woman," picking oakum by a lighted candle, by which most of the business part of the town, including its oldest church and its town-house—two buildings around which clustered its earliest and latest history—was laid in ashes.

Boston  
on fire.

All night the flames raged unchecked. When they had spent their fury the very heart of Boston was a mass of smouldering ruins. It had come like a thief in the night, when the inhabitants were wholly unprepared. Besides a number of lives lost, more than one hundred families were rendered homeless; and so far did this conflagration surpass any that had previously happened in the history of the town, that for fifty years it was always spoken of as the great fire.

A quiet winter was followed by the usual irruptions in the spring. The frontier fairly swarmed with small scalping parties, whose fury chiefly fell upon the towns lying to the east of the Merrimac. It was a sudden dash, a deed of blood, and the perpetrators had vanished as quickly as if the earth had swallowed them up. At Exeter, April 16, 1712, one Cunningham was killed while travelling from Mr. Hilton's to town. Soon after, Samuel Webber was shot between York and Cape Neddock. Three more were slain, and three wounded, while engaged in teaming at Wells. Lieutenant Josiah Littlefield,<sup>1</sup> one of the slain, had but just returned home

<sup>1</sup> LITTLEFIELD'S adventures are given in considerable detail in Bourne's *History of Wells*.

from a long captivity. Getting bolder, the marauders presently showed themselves in the middle of the town, where they secured two captives. They then went to Spruce Creek, in Kittery, New Hampshire and Maine killed one lad, took another, and though raided. closely pursued, made their escape into the woods. Another party struck the upper branch of Oyster River, where they shot Jeremiah Cromett and burned a saw-mill. At Dover, Ensign Tuttle was killed and a son of Lieutenant Heard wounded while standing guard. On May 14th a larger party of the enemy, who had ambushed the road between Wells and Cape Neddock, fell upon a scouting party of English, killed the sergeant,<sup>1</sup> and took seven prisoners besides. The rest fought in retreat, until they came to a high rock where they held their pursuers at bay till relieved by Captain Willard. The only loss sustained by the Indians up to this time was eight slain during a scout up the Merrimac.

Notwithstanding the fact that scouting parties were kept out, John Pickernell was shot at Spruce Creek, as he was in the act of locking his door, his wife wounded, and a child knocked on the head and scalped. Stephen Gilman and Ebenezer Stevens were taken at Kingston, and Gilman was put to death. Two children of John Waldron were seized outside of Heard's garrison at Dover and brutally decapitated because the savages did not have the time to scalp them, and would not lose the scalps. The garrison itself was not molested, although there was no one in it at the time except a few women, one of whom, Esther Jones, kept up such a shouting that the assailants, deceived as to the fact, did no fur-

<sup>1</sup> PENHALLOW, whose account is here followed, calls him Nalton (Knowlton?).

ther mischief there.<sup>1</sup> Berwick and Wells again suffered the loss of a man each, and at Wells, Sambo, a negro slave belonging to Captain John Wheelwright, was carried off while out looking for his master's cows, but quickly made his escape again by trusting to fleetness of foot.<sup>2</sup> On September 1st John Spencer was killed and Dependance Storer wounded.

In September a noteworthy event took place at Wheelwright's garrison. In the midst of all these alarms, or rather in spite of them, his daughter, Hannah, and Elisha Plaistead, of Portsmouth, were to have an old-fashioned wedding, to which the neighbors far and near had been invited, and had come in goodly numbers to witness, as Wheelwright was a man of some consequence in that section. But there were other guests not far off who had come there unbidden. After the nuptial knot had been tied, and the company was separating to their homes, two horses were missing. Some of the party started off to look for the animals, which were supposed to have strayed away. A few minutes after their departure several gunshots were fired in quick succession. The trap laid for the unwary whites was then exposed. Indian cunning had been used to decoy them to their death. On the spur of the moment, a dozen or more men hastily mounted their horses and rode off to the rescue of their friends, the bridegroom with the rest.

This party also fell into an ambushade, from which the savages fired as it was passing at a gallop, killing one man, Captain Robinson, outright, and unhorsing the others. All who were unhurt got safely off except

<sup>1</sup> FENHOLLOW: Belknap's *New Hampshire*.

<sup>2</sup> RELATIVES at length by Bourne, *History of Wells and Kennebunk*.

the  
drag  
Josh  
gear  
A  
den  
mar  
brou  
mak  
two  
their  
to h  
rans  
besic  
He  
said  
this

"I  
but t  
to my

Ha  
kidna  
mome  
of the  
its st  
Wi  
a trea  
11, 17  
Matth

<sup>1</sup> A T  
Anne on

the unlucky bridegroom, who was quickly seized and dragged away by his tawny captors. Of the first party Joshua Downing and Isaac Cole were killed, and Sergeant Tucker was wounded and made a prisoner.

After this rebuff the white men acted with more prudence. A stronger party set out in pursuit of the marauders, who were presently found in strong force, brought to bay, and sharply attacked, though without making much impression. After the loss of a man or two on each side; the Indians slowly moved off with their captives. Soon after a letter came from Plaistead to his father, saying that his captors demanded £50 ransom for him and £30 for his fellow-prisoner, Tucker, besides certain articles of which they stood in want. He put the number of Indians at two hundred, and said they were from Canada. His letter closes with this moving entreaty :

“ Pray, sir, don't fail, for they have given me one day, but the days were but four at first. Give my kind love to my dear wife. This from your dutiful son till death,

“ ELISHA PLAISTEAD.”

Had it been attended with no loss of life, the act of kidnapping a bridegroom, and at such an interesting moment, too, might be fairly classed among the humors of the war, instead of being only one more reminder of its stern realities.

With this affair hostilities definitely closed.<sup>1</sup> In fact a treaty of peace had been signed on April 11, 1713, by the belligerent powers, which Matthew Prior, who, with his patron, St. John, had

Treaty of  
Utrecht.

<sup>1</sup> A TRUCE was signed at Paris, August 7, 1712, old style, and ratified by Queen Anne on the 18th of the same month. News of this reached New England in October.

taken some part in the secret negotiations, tersely characterizes as "the d—d peace of Utrecht." Strong language that; yet it is doubtful if a more scandalous story ever disgraced the annals of a nation; and there were few who could speak with more authority than the pliant tool of an unscrupulous minister. To the colonies, however, who could have no hand in the settlement, the result was everything. Only those who have witnessed the ravages, the demoralizing influences of war, under the weight of which the colonies were being slowly pressed to death, can begin to realize what the sudden lifting of the weight meant to an impoverished people. To them, at least, peace came untainted with dishonor. The loss of life, and that too of the very flower of the country, had been such as to give a check to all thoughts of triumph. From the beginning of Philip's War, in 1675, to the close of Queen Anne's, in 1713, it was reckoned that from five thousand to six thousand had perished in the service—a most grievous blow to the growth of the country. To the miseries incident to the total extinction of some families and the dismemberment of others, were added the burdens of private and public debts, incurred on account of the war, and likely to last out a lifetime. Yet all disasters had been patiently borne, all sacrifices freely made, in the hope of putting an end, once for all, to a state of things in which these complicated evils had their common source.

Under the treaty France gave up Acadia as lost, though not without a struggle which should have been a revelation to the commissioners charged with the duty of framing the various articles. One thing after another was offered to procure

Losses by  
war.

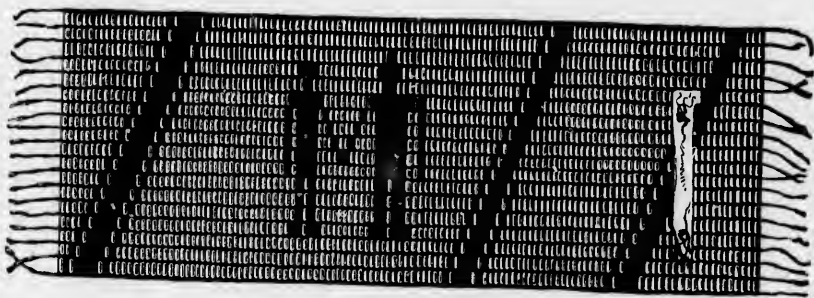
Acadia  
gained.

1713  
1714  
1715  
1716  
1717  
1718  
1719  
1720  
1721  
1722  
1723  
1724  
1725  
1726  
1727  
1728  
1729  
1730  
1731  
1732  
1733  
1734  
1735  
1736  
1737  
1738  
1739  
1740  
1741  
1742  
1743  
1744  
1745  
1746  
1747  
1748  
1749  
1750  
1751  
1752  
1753  
1754  
1755  
1756  
1757  
1758  
1759  
1760  
1761  
1762  
1763  
1764  
1765  
1766  
1767  
1768  
1769  
1770  
1771  
1772  
1773  
1774  
1775  
1776  
1777  
1778  
1779  
1780  
1781  
1782  
1783  
1784  
1785  
1786  
1787  
1788  
1789  
1790  
1791  
1792  
1793  
1794  
1795  
1796  
1797  
1798  
1799  
1800



its return and refused. During the negotiations preliminary to the signing, the following proposal was made: "His Majesty offers to leave the fortifications of Placentia as they are, when he yields that place to England—to agree to the demands made of the guns of Hudson's Bay; moreover, to yield the islands of St. Martin and St. Bartholomew—to give up even the right of fishing and drying cod upon the coast of Newfoundland, if the English will give him back Acadia in consideration of these new cessions which are proposed as an equivalent. In this case his Majesty would consent that the river of St. George should be the limit of Acadia, as England desired."

But after having obstinately refused to gratify Louis by giving back Acadia to France, the English commis-



A WAMPUM PEACE BELT.

sioners immediately proceeded to make an exhibition of imbecility, almost, if not quite, neutralizing the advantages of this hard-earned conquest. Louis was allowed to retain Cape Breton and to fortify there, thus putting it in his power to create a much more formidable post than Annapolis had ever been, and one far better situated for commanding

Louis keeps  
Cape Breton.

the entrance to the St. Lawrence. To the dullest comprehension this piece of folly, or worse, meant that in the event of another war the work just finished would have to be done all over again. To the bewildered colonists nothing, in short, could be plainer; but in England American objects were of secondary importance.

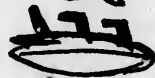
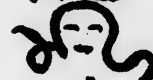
France also gave up all claim to sovereignty over Newfoundland, although the privilege of drying fish on the west coast was granted her—another stupid concession which has periodically threatened to disturb the peace of the two nations until a very late day. In short, as a specimen of modern diplomacy, the Treaty of Utrecht stands without a peer for what it left unsettled and undone.

The French view of the value of Indian alliances was set forth by the pithy remark of De Costabelle to the minister when going to take charge at Cape Breton, "Point d'argent, point de Suisse."

One incident of the treaty is not without interest, if only for its damning testimony to the bigotry of the time. Under date of June, 1713, Lord Dartmouth writes by the queen's orders to Nicholson, at Annapolis, that inasmuch as the Most Christian King had, at her request, "released from imprisonment on board his galleys such of his subjects as were detained there on account of their professing the Protestant religion," it was her Majesty's good pleasure that such of these unfortunates as might have lands or tenements either in Acadia or Newfoundland, and were willing to become British subjects, might retain their property, sell it, or remove, as they should see fit.

The hostile tribes were quickly apprised of the turn

of affairs through their allies, the French. Left to shift for themselves, no time was lost in suing for peace. To this end certain of them came with a **Treaty with Indians.** flag to the fort at Casco, declaring their wish to enter into a treaty with the English. Captain Moody forwarded their request to Governor Dudley, who agreed to hold a conference with them at Portsmouth, which accordingly took place on July 13, 1713, when a treaty, couched in the usual terms, was duly signed and sealed by the contracting parties. It was an agreement in which all the demands were on one side and all the concessions on the other. The Indians, on their part, freely confessed to their past misdeeds, again acknowledged themselves lawful subjects of the Crown of England, promised for the future to forbear all acts of hostility toward the English or in any way obstructing the free entrance of the refugee settlers upon their old plantations. As a measure of security the Indians were prohibited from coming near any English settlement on the west of Saco. Other stipulations were similar to those embodied in the treaty of 1693, made between the Indians and Sir William Phips.

*Kirobenuit.**Warraensitt.**Bomazeen.**Wadacanaquin.**Aneas.**Iteansis.**Jackoid.**Joseph.*

TREATY SYMBOLS.

Here ended twenty years of almost continuous warfare, broken only by a short respite of four years from its alarms, and during which the valor, patience, and endurance of the inhabitants of New England had been put to the severest test. As the truest index to the character of a people, struggling with an adversary against whom it was impossible to cope on equal terms, it is a great story.

## INDEX

- Abenakis. (*See* CANIBAS, MALICITES, MICMACS, PENNACOOKS, SOKOKIS, ETC.)
- Abenquid killed, 108.
- Acadia (Nova Scotia), expedition to attack, 57; restored to France, 153 and *note*.
- Acadians, The, their anomalous condition, 285.
- Adams, Samuel, mentioned, 244 (*note*).
- Agamenticus, Mount, a lookout for Indians, 73.
- Amesbury, Mass., raided, 219.
- Andover, Mass., assailed, 134.
- Andros, Sir Edmund, as war governor, 10; plunders St. Castin, 10; makes a winter march into Maine, 12; is deposed, 13.
- Andros, Captain Elisha, holds peace talk, 69.
- Androscoggin Indians killed by Church, 67.
- Annapolis Royal (*also* PORT ROYAL) menaced with a revolt, 284.
- Appleton, Samuel, 274 (*note*).
- Appleton, Lieutenant-colonel William, at Port Royal, 228.
- Armstrong, Captain Lawrence, escapes the wreck, 279.
- Asacumbuit, his murderous deeds, 248 and *note*.
- Austin, Matthew, slain, 207 (*note*).
- Ayres, Corporal, taken and given his liberty again, 265.
- Baker, Thomas, rescued, 68.
- Baptiste, a corsair, exchanged for Rev. John Williams, 210, 212.
- Barker, Lieut. Col., killed, 201.
- Barnard, Mrs. Benjamin, retaken, 67 (*note*).
- Barnard, Rev. John, account of operations at Port Royal, 228, 229.
- Beaubassin, M. de, conducts the siege of New Casco Fort, 160.
- Beaucour, M. de, strikes Lancaster, Mass., 205.
- Beancour, residence of seceding Abenakis, 150 and *note*.
- Bellomont, Lord, dies, 147, 148.
- Berwick, Me., troops mustered at, 36; killing at, 72; ravages at (1703), 165; desperate attack on (1703), 168; friendly Indians posted at, 188.
- Bickford, Thomas, saves his garrison, 99.
- Biddeford Pool. (*See* WINTER HARBOR.)
- Bigot, Fr. Jaques, sets on attack on York, 76; incites Indians to war, 154.
- Billerica, Mass., raided, 85; killing at, 106 and *note*.
- Black Point. (*See* SCARBOROUGH, ME.)
- Blackman, Benjamin, seizes Indians, 11.
- Blanchard, Hannah, killed, 219.
- Blanchard, Nathaniel, killed, 219.
- Bolingbroke, St. John, Lord, engages in conquest of Canada, 268 and *note*.

- Bomazeen, at sack of Durham, 97; captured, 104; at council of Casco, 151.
- Bonaventure, de, at taking of Pemaquid, 111; implicated in contraband trading, 221 and *note*.
- Bonner, Captain John, impressed as pilot, 274 and *note*.
- Borland, John, fined for contraband trading, 222.
- Boston, plan to destroy it frustrated, 129; visited by small-pox, 149; losses inflicted upon her commerce, 251; great armament assembled at, 272; great fire at, 286.
- Boston News Letter* published, 194 and *note*.
- Boularderie, M. de, wounded at Port Royal, 235.
- Bourne, Edward E., quoted, 288 (*note*).
- Brackett, Anthony, fight at his farm, 39; escapes, 68.
- Bradley, Hannah, scalds an Indian, 169; her sufferings and heroism, 170 and *note*.
- Bradley, Joseph, his garrison captured, 169.
- Bradstreet, Lieutenant-colonel Dudley, his house attacked, 134, 135.
- Bragdon, Arthur, his family slain, 165.
- Breakfast Hill, N. H., 109 and *note*.
- Brookfield, Mass., killing at, 86; depredations at, 92; more killing, 264.
- Broullan (Governor of Acadia), story of his heart, 152 (*note*), 221 (*note*).
- Brown, Captain, drives enemy at Berwick, 168, 169.
- Burt, John, lost in the woods, 258.
- Canada, unassailable, 56; attacked by Phips, 58; does not want peace, 94; her military strength, 143; Vandreuil forms new defensive line, 150; the conquest of, urged, 214; motives for avoiding a conflict with New York, 238; Walker's expedition against fails, 277 *et seq.*
- Canibas, location of, 8.
- Cape Breton becomes a strategic point, 291.
- Cape Elizabeth, Church's fight there, 69.
- Cape Neddock, Me., visited by Church, 69; killing at, 71.
- Cape Porpoise laid waste, 158.
- Captain Nathaniel at sack of Durham, 97.
- Captain Samuel at council of Casco, 151.
- Captain Tom raids Hampton, 162.
- Casco, or New Casco, important council held at, 150; fort assaulted, 159. (*See FALMOUTH also.*)
- Caughnawagas turn back from war, 241.
- Chaillons, St. Ours de, attacks Haverhill, 240.
- Chambly, a French officer, killed, 248.
- Charlevoix, Francis Xavier, referred to, 228.
- Checkley, Rev. Samuel, 244 (*note*).
- Chesley, Captain, killed, 236.
- Chignecto (Beaubassin) burned, 113; again destroyed, 203.
- Chubb, Captain Pascho, in command at Pemaquid, 107; seizes Indians, 108; surrenders the fort, 111; put in arrest, 112; slain by Indians, 134.
- Church, Benjamin, first expedition of, 38 *et seq.*; fight at Falmouth, 39; limit of march, 42; second expedition, 66 *et seq.*; operations on the Androscoggin, 67; goes to Pemaquid, 84, 85; fourth expedition, 112, 113; superseded, 114 and

- note*; offers his services to Dudley, 193; fifth expedition, 196 *et seq.*; lays Acadia waste, 201, 202.
- Church, John, killed, 266.
- Coffin, Ebenezer, fined for contraband trading, 222.
- Cole, Abigail, killed, 108.
- Cole, Isaac, killed, 289.
- Cole, Nicholas, killed, 189.
- Cole, Thomas, killed, 108.
- Colton, Captain Thomas, notable exploit of, 86.
- Connecticut, sends soldiers into the Valley, 164; agrees to aid in its defence, 173; complaint of backwardness of, 220; raises forces to invade Canada, 251.
- Connecticut Valley, fighting strength of (1704), 173 and *note*.
- Contoocook River, N. H., scene of Mrs. Dustan's exploit, 122.
- Contraband trade, exposure of, 221.
- Converse, Captain James, repulses Indians at Wells, 70, 71; his brave defence of, 76-81; ranges in Maine, 92.
- Courtemanche, Tilly de, at the taking of Falmouth, 49; in Boston about exchange of prisoners, 209.
- Cow Island (Saco River), soldiers slain at, 132.
- Cowass, or Cowassuc, rumors of an Indian fort there, 190 and *note*; adventure of a ranging party there, 191.
- Cromett, Jeremiah, killed, 287.
- Cutts, Mrs. Ursula, killed, 102.
- Dane, Thomas, taken prisoner, 189.
- Davis, Captain Sylvanus, surrenders Fort Loyal, 52; his narrative, 54 (*note*); is exchanged, 64.
- Dean, John, his saw-mill, 96; is killed, 97; Mrs. Dean's escape, 98.
- Deerfield, Mass., a frontier village, 172; expects an attack, 174; the blow falls, 177; set on fire, 180; slaughter at, 180.
- Des Goutins confirms contraband trading, 221.
- Diamond, John, tortured to death, 81.
- Doneys at taking of Falmouth, 49; Robin Doney captured, 104.
- Dover, N. H., sacking of, 14-22; how protected, 14; Indians seized at, 17; loss of life at, 21; killing at, 109; escapes an ambush, 207 (*note*); man killed at, 264; more outrages at, 266, 287.
- Downing, Dennis, slain by Indians, 131.
- Downing, Joshua, killed, 289.
- Drake, Samuel G., his preparations for this work, 1.
- Drew, John, his house assaulted, 216.
- Dudley, Joseph, made governor, 148; arrives in Boston, 149; efforts to keep the peace, 150; efforts to meet the crisis, 163, 164; labors with Governor Winthrop for defence of Connecticut Valley, 173; notified to look to Deerfield, 174; his disgust with want of energy there, 183; employs friendly Indians, 188; plays fast and loose about Port Royal, 204; suggests a neutrality to Vaudreuil, 210; urges conquest of Canada, 214 (*note*); suspected of contraband trading, 223; sends fleet back to Port Royal, 234; troubles with British commanders, 272 *et seq.*; makes peace with hostiles, 293.
- Dudley, Paul, brings action against illicit traders, 222.
- Dudley, William, goes to Canada about exchange, 210 and *note*; at Port Royal, 228.
- Dummer, Rev. Shubael, killed, 75.
- Dunkin, Bencni, killed, 68.
- Dunkin, Mary, killed, 68.

- Dunstable, sharp combat at, 218 and *notes*.
- Durell, Philip, his family carried off, 158 and *note*.
- Durham, N. H., attacked, 38 (*also OYSTER RIVER*); depredations at, 92; murderous descent on, 96 *et seq.*; loss of life at, 102; further killing at, 207 (*note*); again molested, 216; massacre at (1707), 236.
- Dustan, Hannah, taken captive, 120; kills her captors and makes her escape, 125, 126; gets bounty for scalps, 128.
- Dustan, Thomas, saves his children, 118.
- Dutton, Joanna, killed, 86.
- Eastport, Me., visited by Church, 199.
- Egeremet, a Kennebec sagamore, 11; at the attack on Wells, 76; killed, 108.
- Egg Islands, Walker's fleet wrecked at, 278.
- Emerson, Jonathan, his garrison, 243.
- Exeter, N. H., attacked, 54; killing at, 72; disturbed by enemy, 131; several persons slain at, 220; again, 264.
- Falmouth, Me. (*also CASCO*), Swaine's fight at, 37; Church relieves it, 39; losses at, 41; attacked and burned, 49-51; Fort Loyal taken, 52; dead buried at, 84; Falmouth new fort assaulted, 159 (*see CASCO*); settlement burned, 160.
- Faneuil, Andrew, undertakes to supply Walker's expedition, 273.
- Fletcher, Pendleton, taken captive, 264.
- Floyd, Captain, pursues Indians, 54.
- Fort Ann, Kennebec River, 13 (*note*).
- Fort Loyal, attacked and taken, 50; capitulation broken, 53.
- Fort William Henry, Me., 85.
- Foss, Humphrey, captured and rescued, 266.
- Fox Point, N. H., assaulted, 54.
- Freeman, Captain, at Port Royal, 227 (*note*), 228.
- Frontenac, Louis de Buade, Count de, sketched, 44; sends out war parties, 46; defends Quebec, 59; plans capture of Pemaquid, 109.
- Frost, Captain Charles, at Dover, 17; is slain, 131.
- Fryeburg, Me., early home of the Pequawket tribe, 4.
- Galley slaves, French Protestants serving as such, 292.
- Gallop, Captain Samuel, his men killed, 168.
- Galusha, Rachel, killed, 219.
- Gardiner, Rev. Andrew, killed by mistake, 207.
- Gardner, Captain —, fights at Haverhill, 243.
- Garland, David, slain, 264.
- Garrison houses, their design, 2; at Dover, 14; at Casco or Falmouth, 50; at York, 74, 75; at towns in Massachusetts, 95; at Durham, 98, 99; at Haverhill, 117; at Berwick, 168; garrison life, 224; at Haverhill, 243.
- Gerrish, Sarah, her captivity, 23-26; is released, 64.
- Gilman, Jacob, captured, 264.
- Gilman, Stephen, killed, 287.
- Gooch, Benjamin, escapes Indians, 189 and *note*.
- Greenleaf, Captain, pursues Indians, 54.
- Groton, Mass., raided, 102.
- Gyles, John, relation of, 30 *et seq.*
- Gyles, Mark, wounded, 207 (*note*).
- Gyles, Thomas, killed, 32.
- Haley, Sergeant, killed, 106.
- Hammond, Major, taken, 106.
- Hampton Village, N. H., barred, 162.



- Harding, Stephen, makes his escape from Indians, 155, 156.
- Harmon, Johnson, mentioned, 204 (*note*).
- Hartshorne, Thomas, killed, 246.
- Hatch, Colonel, 244 (*note*).
- Haverhill, Mass., situation and defences of, 117, 118; Indian descent at, 118 *et seq.*; onslaught of 1708, 243 *et seq.*; sharp fight at, 248.
- Hawthorne (or Hathorne), Captain William, seizes Indians, 16; supersedes Church, 114.
- Haynes, Jonathan, killed, 135.
- Heard, Ann, retaken, 67.
- Heard, Mrs. John, slain, 131.
- Heard, Lieutenant, bravery of, 266.
- Hertel, François, leads an attack on Salmon Falls, 47; at Falmouth, 49.
- Hill, Brigadier John, commands troops destined for Canada, 268, 271 (*note*).
- Hill, Ensign John, his lucky escape, 80.
- Hill, Captain Samuel, acts in behalf of his fellow-prisoners, 209, 210.
- Hilton, Major Winthrop, goes out with Church, 199; leads forces to Norridgewock, 208; scouts in Maine, 225; serves at Port Royal, 227; is assassinated, 263 and *note*.
- Hinsdale, Mehuman, captured, 256.
- Hobby, Sir Charles, at Port Royal, 259.
- Hodgdon, Nicholas, slain, 189.
- Hoel, Mrs., slain, 215.
- Hopewood, at taking of Falmouth, 49; strikes Fox Point, 54.
- Horn, John, wounded, 266.
- How, Captain, defends Lancaster, 206.
- Huckins, Mrs. Robert, recaptured, 67 (*note*).
- Hunnewell, Captain Richard, slain at Black Point, 164.
- Huntoon, Philip, captured, 264.
- Huntoon, Samuel, killed, 264.
- Hutchins, Enoch, loses wife and children, 215.
- Hutchinson, Major Thomas, sent to the relief of York, 76; at Port Royal, 234.
- Hutchinson, Thomas, cited on Indian barbarities, 184 (*note*).
- Iberville, Le Moyne de, takes Penaquid, 110; takes possession of Newfoundland, 114.
- Indian names, unreliability of early tribal designations, 3.
- Indian tribes, how placed in 1687, 3, 4.
- Indians of New England (see different tribes); how King William's War left them, 137, 138; situation of, 224; compelled to submit, 293.
- Iroquois furnish warriors to invade Canada, 253; at Port Royal, 259.
- Isles of Shoals threatened, 72.
- James II., his death-bed, 141.
- Johnson, Jonathan, slain at Haverhill, 169.
- Joliet, Louis, taken prisoner, 64.
- Jones, Esther, her clever stratagem, 287.
- Joslin, Peter, family butchered, 85.
- Kankamagus, attacks Dover, 18; hostages for his good behavior, 68.
- Kent, Mr., slain at Casco, 160.
- King, Colonel, his journal quoted, 274 (*note*).
- King William's War, causes of, 9, 10; ended by Peace of Ryswick, 134; loss of life by it, 137.
- Kingston, N. H., visited by scalping party, 264, 287.
- Kittery, Me., killing at, 103; Indians at, 106; again infest it, 215 and *note*.
- La Brognerie killed, 79.

- Ladd, Samuel, killed, 135.
- La Hontan, Baron, on St. Castin, 27.
- Lamprey River, N. H. (Newmarket), attacked, 54.
- Lancaster, Mass., raided, 85; again, 133; nearly destroyed, 205, 206.
- La Perrière in attack on Haverhill, 240.
- Larrabee, William, family butchered, 158.
- Lawrence, Daniel, captured, 86.
- Lawrence, Thomas, taken and killed, 86.
- Lawson, Roger, fined for contraband trading, 222.
- Lee, Mrs., redeemed from captivity, 39.
- Leonardson, Samuel, a captive to the Pennacocks, 123; helps to slaughter his captors, 125.
- Leverett, John, sent to Port Royal, 234.
- Littlefield, Lieutenant Josiah, killed, 286 and *note*.
- Littlefield, Mrs. —, killed, 236.
- Livingstone, Captain John, goes to Canada about exchange of prisoners, 209; at taking of Port Royal, 260; goes on a mission to Canada, 261.
- Longley, Lydia, taken prisoner, 103 (*note*).
- Longley, John, taken prisoner, 103 (*note*).
- Louis XIV., he directs colonial affairs, 146.
- Lyman, Caleb, his account of a scout, 191.
- Madockawando, at taking of Falmouth, 49; heads attack on Wells, 76; at Quebec, 87; breaks the treaty, 96.
- Magoon, John, killed, 264.
- Malicites, location of, 3.
- Manchester, N. H., various names of, 167 (*note*).
- March, Captain John, marches to Pejepscot, 72; at Pemaquid, 85; scouting in Maine, 130; beats off Indians at Falmouth, 159 and *note*; idle march into wilderness, 164; kills Indians at Pigwacket, 165; commands at Port Royal, 227.
- Mare Point, Me., peace concluded at, with Indians, 136.
- Marlborough, Mass., killing at, 264.
- Martin, Captain, commands fleet at Port Royal, 259.
- Mascarene, Paul, at taking of Port Royal, 259.
- Mason, Major Samuel, commands friendly Indians, 188.
- Massachusetts forces in the field, 217; forces for invasion of Canada, 251.
- Massacre Pond, Me., 165 (*note*).
- Mather, Cotton, on the war, 10.
- Matinicus Island, Me., Church makes his rendezvous there, 196 and *note*.
- Medockteco Fort, 34.
- Meneval (Governor of Acadia) charges Phips with robbing him, 58 (*note*).
- Mesandowit's treachery, 18.
- Micmacs, location of, 3.
- Mines, or Grand Pré, burned, 201.
- Monhegan Island, Church's forces at, 113.
- Moody, William, captured, 256; his strange adventures, 257-59.
- Mount Desert Island, Church's expedition puts in at, 197.
- Moxus, goes against Pemaquid, 28; attacks Wells, 70; again, 76; renews hostilities, 95; raids Groton, 102; escapes from his captors, 108.
- Munjoy Hill, Portland, Me., massacre at, 50, 51.
- Neale's garrison, Berwick, Me., defended, 168.
- Neff, Mary, taken at Haverhill, 120.

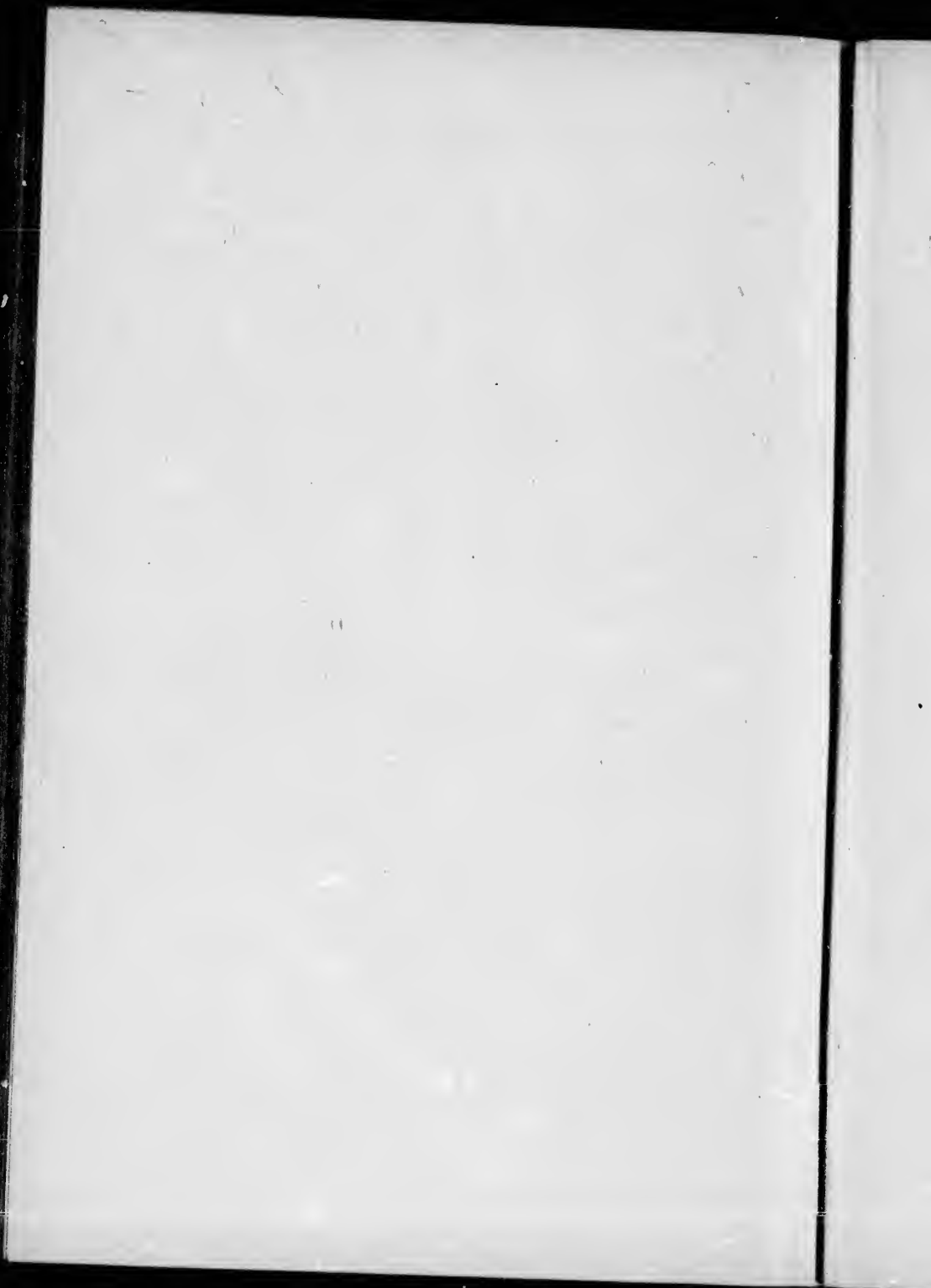
- Nicholson, Governor Francis, sends Mrs. Dustan a pewter tankard, 128; takes the lead in plan to invade Canada, 250 and *note*; leads troops to Wood Creek, 253; is compelled to break camp, 254; sails for England, 254; returns and takes Port Royal, 259; his journal, 261 (*note*); threatens Vaudreuil with retaliation, 262; induces the ministry to attempt conquest of Canada, 267; at Boston, 269; obliged to retreat, 281.
- Norridgewock, Me., Indian mission at, 76; attempt to surprise fails, 208.
- Northampton, Mass., garrison at surprised, 190.
- North Yarmouth, Me., raided, 11.
- Old Harry slain, 167.
- Oyster River. (*See* DURHAM.)
- Paper money, first Massachusetts issue, 65; another issue, 275.
- Parsons, Mrs. Hannah, taken captive, 165.
- Partridge, Colonel Samuel, report on fighting strength of Connecticut Valley, 173.
- Passacomuc, Easthampton, Mass., 190 (*note*).
- Peace of Ryswick proclaimed, 134.
- Peace of Utrecht, 289, 290; unfavorable to New England, 291.
- Peaslee garrisons (Joseph and Nathaniel), situation of, 243, 245.
- Pejepscot Fort, Church at, 67; revisited, 68.
- Pemaquid, taken, 23, 29; fort rebuilt, 84; strategic importance described, 84 (*note*); named William Henry, 85; plan to surprise, 88; treaty concluded at, 93; four killed and six wounded at, 107; again taken, by Iberville, 110.
- Penhallow, Samuel, singular statement of his, 186 and *note*.
- Nelson, John, scene with Phips, 58 (*note*); is taken prisoner, 87 and *note*; thwarts Frontenac's plans, 88; is sent to France a prisoner, 90; is released, 92; referred to, 221 (*note*); is consulted about Canada, 271.
- Nesmond, Marquis de, to destroy Boston, 129.
- Newbury, Mass., nine persons carried off, 107.
- New Dartmouth (Newcastle), Me., raided, 11.
- New England unprepared for war, 10; does not wish for it, 44; new charter goes into effect, 82; losses by King William's War, 137; population in 1702, 142; military system, 143; men in service, 170; importance of her fisheries in Acadian waters, 237; raises more troops for Canada, 270; effect of Walker's disaster upon, 281; losses by the wars, 290.
- New England frontier, extent of in 1687, 2; unsettled state of under Andros, 10; garrisons established to cover (*see* GARRISONS); condition in 1694, 95; act to prevent desertion of, 95.
- Newfoundland, importance of to New England, 115.
- New Hampshire, on the point of desertion, 95; her efforts in the war (1703), 170.
- New Harbor, Me., in 1689, 32.
- Newichewannock. (*See* BERWICK, ME.)
- New Jersey refuses aid to invade Canada, 252.
- New London, Conn., meeting of governors at, 270.
- New York, tacit truce with Canada, 238; raises troops to invade Canada, 251; enters heartily upon Canada campaign, 270.

- Pennacooks, location of, 3; give shelter to Philip's men, 15.
- Pennsylvania refuses troops in Queen Anne's War, 252.
- Phillips, John, Jr., fined for contraband trading, 222.
- Phippeny, Mr., killed at Casco, 160.
- Phips, Sir William, who he was, 57; takes Port Royal, 58; repulsed at Quebec, 59; appointed governor, 82; rebuilds Pemaquid, 84; signs treaty there, 93; dies in England, 105.
- Pickernell, John, shot, 287.
- Pine Point (*also* BLUE POINT), Me., skirmish at, 30.
- Plaistead, Elisha, ludicrous adventure of, 288, 289.
- Portneuf leads an attack on Fal-mouth, 49; against Wells, 77.
- Port Royal, N. S., how named, 55 (*note*); taken by Phips, 57; re-taken by Villebon, 72; reduction of discussed, 226; troops raised for it, 227; are landed, 228; re-embark, 233; are sent back again, 234; but fail as before, 235; is finally taken by Nicholson, 261; called Annapolis Royal, 261.
- Portsmouth, N. H., raided, 109.
- Praying Indians, location of, 3.
- Price, Captain, at Haverhill, 243.
- Prior, Matthew, his agency in peace negotiations, 290.
- Prisoners, steps looking to exchange of, 238 *et seq.*
- Purpooduc Point, Me., Church's fight at, 69; slaughter at, 159.
- Quaboag. (*See* BROOKFIELD.)
- Quebec, Phips repulsed at, 58, 59; its strength, 60; English plan of attack, 62.
- Queen Anne's War breaks out, 141; a pretext found for it, 154.
- Queen's Arms first imported, 194.
- Rale, Sebastian, excites Indians to war, 154.
- Redknap, Colonel (engineer officer), at Port Royal, 227 and *note*; gives half-hearted aid, 253.
- Rehoboth, meeting of governors at, 254.
- Rhode Island raises troops for invasion of Canada, 251 and *note*.
- Roaring Rock, locality in York, Me., 75.
- Robinson, Captain, killed, 288.
- Rolfe, Rev. Benjamin, slain, 244 and *note*.
- Romer, Colonel Wolfgang, mentioned, 227 (*note*).
- Rouville, Hertel de, leads an attack on Deerfield, 175; begins his retreat, 182; is attacked, but beats off his assailants, 184; is wounded, 186; leads a war-party against Haverhill, 240.
- Rowse, William, detected in contraband trading, 221; arrested and fined, 221.
- Rye, N. H., killing at, 72.
- Saco Falls, Biddeford, Me., 36 (*note*); Church at, 69; fort built at, 93 and *note*; Indians infest, 106; soldiers surprised at, 132; fort assaulted, 159 and *note*; more killing at, 167; again visited, 264.
- Saco River, Indians killed at, 68.
- Sagadahoc, truce of, 70 and *note*.
- Saillant, M. de, killed, 235.
- St. Castin, Baron de, his trading-post plundered, 10; his career, 27; heads an attack against Pemaquid, 28; at the taking of Port Royal, 49; at the assault of Wells, 77.
- St. Castin, the younger, leads Indians against Pemaquid, 110; his house plundered, 154; wife and children taken, 197; fights and is wounded at Port Royal, 235; goes on a mission to Canada, 262.

- St. Croix River, landings raided by Church, 199, 200 and *note*.
- St. Francis, village of seceding Abenakis, 150 and *note*.
- St. John River, skirmish at, 114.
- St. John's, Newfoundland, taken by French, 114; and is burned, 115.
- Salmon Falls, N. H., destroyed, 47, 48.
- Scalp bounty, offered by Massachusetts, 166; increased, 192.
- Scamman, Captain Humphrey, taken by Indians, 132.
- Scarborough (*also* BLACK POINT), assaulted, 159 and *note*; massacre at, 164, 165 and *note*; Indians slain at, 225 and *note*.
- Schenectady sacked and burned, 46.
- Schuyler, Captain John, bold dash of, 58 (*note*).
- Schuyler, Colonel Peter, warns Dudley of a threatened descent, 174; sows defection among the French Iroquois, 239; takes Indians to England, 254, 255.
- Sewall, Samuel, on the Schenectady affair, 46; his prayer, 226.
- Sheaffe, Commissary, quoted, 234.
- Shed, Agnes, killed, 86.
- Shed, Ann, killed, 86.
- Shed, Hannah, killed, 86.
- Sheepscot, John, 105 and *note*.
- Sheldon, Ensign John, his house forced, 179 and *note*; goes to Canada about exchange, 209, 212; brings back Deerfield prisoners, 212.
- Sheldon, Hannah, taken captive, 179; redeemed, 209.
- Sherburne, Captain, killed, 72.
- Sill, Captain Joseph, seizes Indians, 16.
- Simsbury, Conn., killing at, 264.
- Smith, Henry, taken prisoner, 11.
- Snowshoe men for winter marches, 167.
- Sokakis, locations of, 3, 4. (*See also* PEQUAWKETS.)
- Southwest Harbor. (*See* MOUNT DESERT.)
- Spanish River, Cape Breton, Walker's fleet at, 280.
- Spencer, John, killed, 288.
- Spruce Creek, Elliot, Me., killing at, 103, 287.
- Spurwink, Me., slaughter at, 159.
- Stebbins, Benoni, heroic defence of, 180.
- Stevens, Ebenezer, captured, 287.
- Stevens, Samuel, captured, 256.
- Stoddard, John, escapes from Deerfield, 178.
- Stoddard, Rev. Solomon, his mode of hunting Indians down, 166 and *note*; account of the sack of Deerfield, 186 (*note*).
- Storer, Dependance, wounded, 288.
- Storer's garrison, Wells, Me., brave defence of, 77.
- Stoughton, William, succeeds Phips, 105; dies, 148.
- Subercase, M de, appointed Governor of Acadia, 221 (*note*); commands at Port Royal, 229; his successful defence, 234, 237; surrenders at last, 260 and *note*, 261 and *note*.
- Swaine, Captain Jeremiah, marches into Maine, 36.
- Tailer, Colonel William, at taking of Port Royal, 259.
- Tasker, William, wounded, 207 (*note*).
- Taylor, Edward, taken prisoner, 11.
- Teconnet, an Indian village, 11.
- Ten Years' War. (*See* KING WILLIAM'S WAR.)
- Thury, Father (missionary), goes against Pemaquid, 28, 33; sets on Indians against York, 76; at the sack of Durham, 100; at taking of Pemaquid, 111.
- Townsend sent to Port Royal, 234.
- Turner, Major, at Haverhill, 243.

- Tuttle, Ensign, killed, 287.
- Two Brothers, Me., site of Indian treaty, 151.
- Tyng, Jonathan, entertains Mrs. Dustan, 127 (*note*); defends Lancaster, 205, 206.
- Tyng, Captain John, killed, 264.
- Tyng, Colonel William, slays Indians, 167 and *note*.
- United Colonies take action on the war, 38 and *note*.
- Vaudreuil, M. de, his capacity, 145; persuades Indians to remove to Canada, 150; devastates Maine, 154 *et seq.*; negotiates with Dudley, 208-12; under orders not to attack New York, 238 and *note*; treats Nicholson's threats with contempt, 262; tries to recover Acadia, 285.
- Verchères, a French officer, killed, 248.
- Vetch, Colonel Samuel, comes to Boston, 171; goes to Canada, about exchange, 210 and *note*; accused of taking soundings, 215 (*note*); implicated in trading with enemy, 221; and fined, 223 and *note*; is authorized to raise forces against Canada, 250; at the taking of Port Royal, 259; takes command there, 261; put in command of New England troops, 270.
- Villieu, Sieur de, stirs up the Indians to war, 94; leads attack on Durham, 96.
- Wainwright, Colonel Francis, serves at Port Royal, 227; succeeds to the command, 235 and *note*.
- Wainwright, Captain Simon, slain, 242, 246.
- Waldron, Richard, a leading citizen, 14; object of Indian revenge, 15; is tortured to death, 19.
- Walker, Sir Hovenden, given command of fleet destined for Canada, 268; its strength, 270; is driven back, 276 *et seq.*; loss of life, 279 (*note*); flag-ship blown up, 282; his journal, 283 (*note*).
- Walley, Major John, leads troops at Quebec, 62.
- Walton, Colonel Shadrach, at Port Royal, 259; his successful scout, 265; marches to Ossipee Ponds, 266; scouts to Penobscot, 284; made secure, 285.
- Wanalancet warns of the intended raid on Dover, 22 (*note*).
- War of the Austrian Succession begins, 141.
- Waterbury, Conn., killing at, 264.
- Webber, Samuel, killed, 286.
- Wedgewood, John, captured, 264.
- Weems, Captain James, surrenders Pemaquid, 30.
- Wells, John, goes to Canada about prisoners, 209.
- Wells, Jonathan, heads a pursuing party, 182.
- Wells, Me., conference at, 69; Indians repulsed at, 71, 72; again attacked, 76; is desolated, 155 and *note*; troops quartered at, 163; men of killed, 189; more killed at, 266; still another descent, 286; Indians attack a wedding party at, 288, 269.
- Wheeler, John, killed, 216.
- Wheelwright, Esther, becomes a Catholic, 213.
- Wheelwright's garrison, Me., men of slain, 189.
- Wheelwright, Hannah, Indians break up her wedding festivities, 288.
- Wheelwright's Pond, N. H., fight at, 54.
- Whiting, Rev. John, slain by Indians, 183 and *note*.
- Whiting, Colonel William, report of losses at Deerfield, 180 (*note*); at taking of Port Royal, 259.

- Whittaker, Anna, her claims, 245 and *note*.
- Wilder, Lieutenant, killed, 205.
- Willard, Captain, at Falmouth, Me., 49 (*note*), 237.
- William Henry, name of Pemaquid fort, 85.
- Williams, Eleazer, 185 and *note*.
- Williams, Eunice, 185.
- Williams, Mrs. John, slain, 184 and *note*.
- Williams, Rev. John, singular premonition of danger, 176; his account of the sack of Deerfield, 177; is taken prisoner, 178; sufferings on the march, 184; exchanged, 185; some account of his family, 185 and *note*.
- Williams, Stephen, redeemed, 211.
- Wilmington, Mass., harried, 219.
- Winslow, Samuel, killed, 264.
- Winter Harbor, attack on repulsed, 158, 159 and *note*; killing at, 264.
- Winthrop, Fitz-John, commands land forces, 58 (*note*), 173 and *note*; puts more spirit into the war, 187.
- Wiswall, Captain Noah, killed, 54.
- Witchcraft delusion breaks out, 83.
- Wolcot, Mrs. Joseph, killed, 86.
- Woodman's garrison, Durham, defended, 100 and *note*, 101.
- Wooster River, Me., fight at, 48.
- Worombo, his women and children become hostages, 68.
- Wright, Captain Benjamin, narrative, 259 (*note*).
- Wyatt, Lieutenant, defends Black Point, 165.
- York, Me., laid waste, 73 *et seq.*; murders at, 165; more murders, 266.





# AMERICAN HISTORY

By SAMUEL ADAMS DRAKE

FIVE VOLUMES PICTURING THE  
BEGINNINGS OF OUR COUNTRY

---

*"These books aim to meet, so far as they may, the want for brief, compact, and handy manuals of the beginnings of our country; and though primarily designed for school or home instruction, in the study of history, pains have been taken to make them of interest to adult readers, more especially to teachers, by the addition of copious explanatory notes or by references. Taken together, the volumes afford an opportunity for reviewing the early colonization of this country in the true historical spirit. The series is adapted not only for the use of teachers, but also for private reading, and in the hands of intelligent boys and girls in their teens, ought to be productive of much sound culture."*—Boston Beacon.

---

## THE BORDER WARS OF NEW ENGLAND

COMMONLY CALLED KING WILLIAM'S AND QUEEN ANNE'S WARS

With 58 Illustrations and Maps. 12mo, \$1.50

Mr. Drake has made a consecutive, entertaining narrative of the border wars which the French and Indians waged against the English settlers in New England during the reigns of King William and Queen Anne. The story is full of adventurous interest and is told with that minute attention to suggestive and instructive details which have been the distinguishing feature of Mr. Drake's other books.

---

## THE MAKING OF THE OHIO VALLEY STATES

1660-1837

With 74 Illustrations and Maps. 12mo, \$1.50

*"Mr. Drake is the story-telling historian. He seizes upon the points of interest in the life of the nation and presents them as a picture. This latest volume of his is a gallery of such scenes. They are strikingly vivid in incident and relation. They are colored with the romance of wild life. The details are few and simple, but they have the greatness of heroic action."*—Boston Transcript.

# THE MAKING OF NEW ENGLAND

1580-1643

With 148 Illustrations and Maps. 12mo, \$1.50

CONTENTS: I. Westward, Ho! II. Coming to Stay. III. Historic Stepping-Stones. IV. Coming of the Puritans. V. Outswarms from the Mother Colony. VI. The Era of Progress.

"I have read 'The Making of New England,' and like it exceedingly. The matter is well chosen and well arranged. I particularly like the presentation of the various minor settlements between the coming of the Pilgrims and the great Massachusetts Emigration—a matter of which many people are almost ignorant. The picture of early Colonial life is clear and excellent."—*Francis Parkman*.

"The interest of the story is enhanced by the emphasis given to everything that went to make up the whole life of the pioneer settlers, or that related to their various avocations. It enables us to see how these men lived, and know the secret processes by which the New England character was so moulded as to become a national force as well as a type."—*School Journal*.

# THE MAKING OF VIRGINIA AND THE MIDDLE COLONIES

1578-1701

With 80 Illustrations and Maps. 12mo, \$1.50

CONTENTS: I. The English in Virginia. II. The English in Maryland. III. The Great Iroquois League. IV. The Dutch on Manhattan. V. The Dutch, Swedes and English on the Delaware.

"This handsome little volume will be found interesting as the best romance for cultivated readers. It is among the very excellent books of its kind, and will stimulate every young reader to long for a wider discussion of the topics introduced. That is high art in outline history."—*Inter-Ocean*, Chicago.

# THE MAKING OF THE GREAT WEST

1512-1883

With 145 Illustrations and Maps. 12mo, \$1.50

CONTENTS: *Group I.* Three Rival Civilizations. I. The Spaniards. II. The French. III. The English. *Group II.* Birth of the American Idea. I. America for Americans. II. The Pathfinders. III. The Oregon Trail. *Group III.* Gold in California, and What It Led To. I. The Great Emigration. II. The Contest for Free Soil. III. The Crown of the Continent.

"Clearly and concisely Mr. Drake has traced the history of the Great West, or that part of the United States lying beyond the Mississippi, under the Spaniards and the French, and he has described the movements which led, in orderly succession, to the triumph of our own people in converting a wilderness into a rich and populous region. With rare skill he has confined his narrative to essentials, but the story is told in such a way that fact becomes more fascinating than fiction. The volume is beautifully printed and profusely illustrated."—*Public Opinion*.

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS, PUBLISHERS

153-157 Fifth Avenue, New York

# GLAND

\$1.50

III. Historic  
V. Outswarms  
ss.

ceedingly. The  
presentation of  
s and the great  
almost ignorant.  
*Parkman.*

to everything  
related to their  
and know the  
moulded as to

# ND THE

1.50

ish in Mary-  
ch on Man-  
Delaware.

best romance  
ind, and will  
topics intro-

# WEST

50

Spaniards.  
rth of the  
The Path-  
d in Cali-  
tion. II.  
Continent.

eat West, or  
Spaniards  
erly succes-  
a rich and  
entials, but  
an fiction.  
*Opinion.*

S

